This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

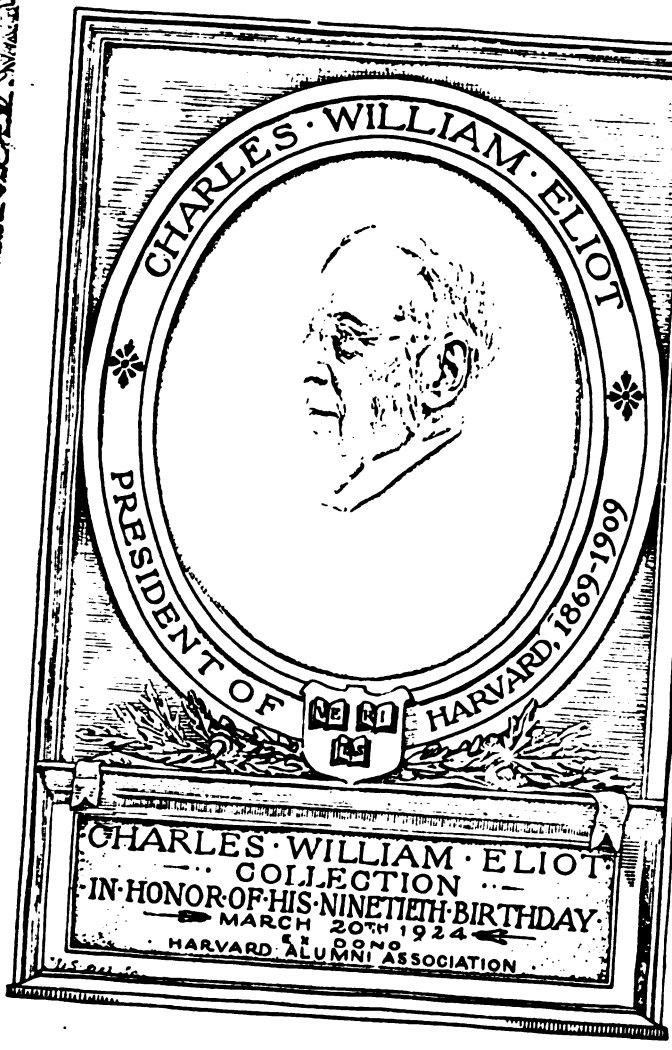
About Google Book Search

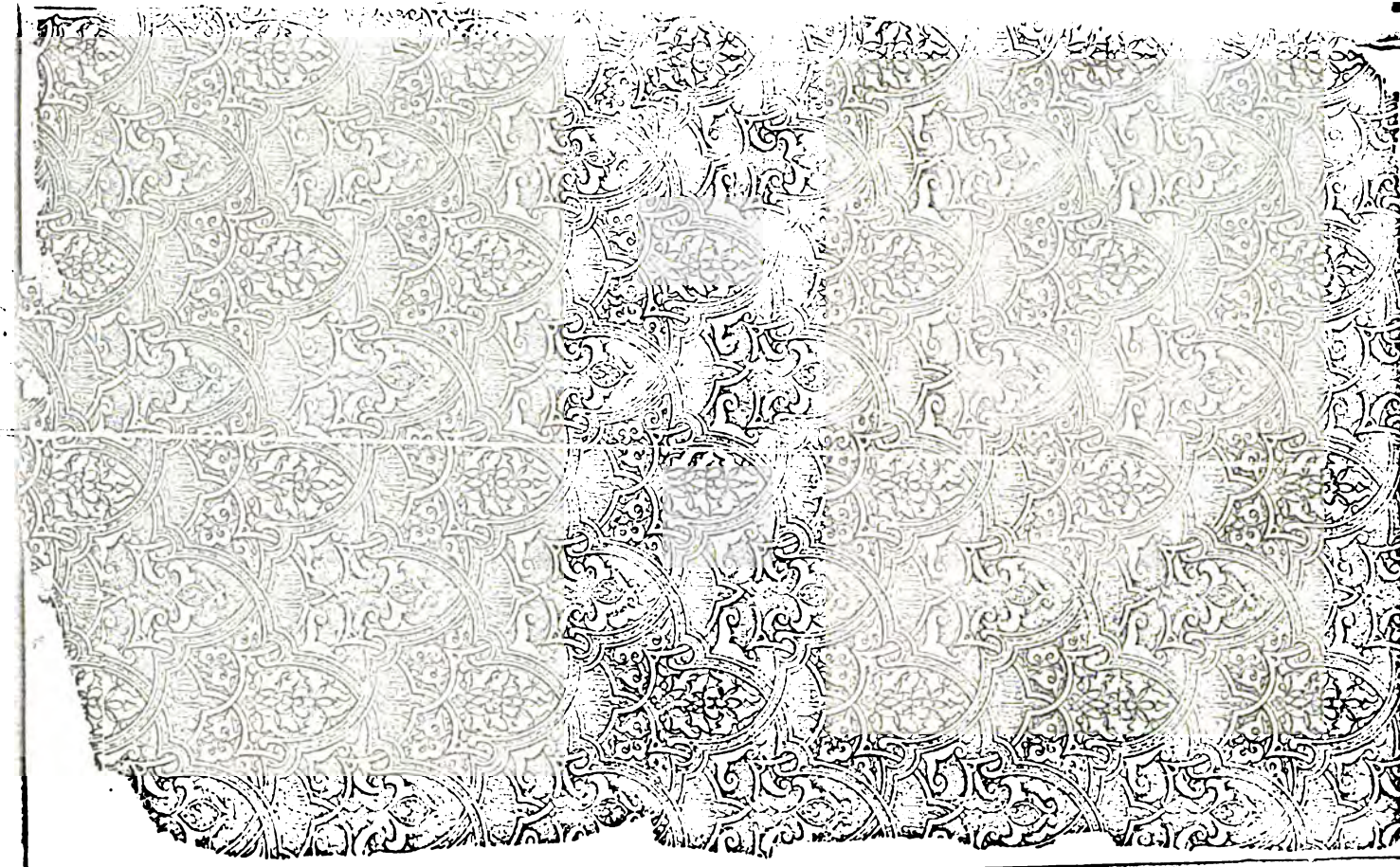
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

HARVARD UNIVERSITY

LIBRARY OF THE

GRADUATE SCHOOL
OF EDUCATION


CHARLES · WILLIAM · ELIOT
PRESIDENT OF HARVARD, 1869-1909
CHARLES · WILLIAM · ELIOT
COLLECTION
IN · HONOR · OF · HIS · NINETIETH · BIRTHDAY
MARCH 20TH 1924
EX DONO
HARVARD ALUMNI ASSOCIATION



LA GRANDE CHARTREUSE, NEAR GRENOBLE. *Frontispiece.*

CHARTERHOUSE

PAST AND PRESENT

BRIEF HISTORY OF THE HOSPITAL FOUNDED IN CHARTERHOUSE BY THOMAS SUTTON, AND MORE PARTICULARLY OF THE SCHOOL BELONGING THERETO

BY

WILLIAM HAIG BROWN, LL.D.

HEAD MASTER

GODALMING

H. STEDMAN, HIGH STREET

1879

[redacted]
HARVARD UNIVERSITY
GRADUATE SCHOOL OF EDUCATION
MONROE C. GUTMAN LIBRARY
D A687
.C2B8
JUN 8 1928
[redacted]

VIRO REVERENDO

GEORGIO CURREY, S.T.P.

HOSPITII SUTTONIANI MAGISTRO

SCHOLÆ CARTHUSIANÆ REGENDÆ QUINDECIMVIRO

ECCLESIÆ CATHEDRALIS DIV. PAULI PRÆBENDARIO

MULTIS NOMINIBUS OPTIME DE CARTHUSIANIS MERITO

OPUSCULUM ISTUD

OBSERVANTIÆ EGO

D. D. D.

GULIELMUS HAIG BROWN

PREFACE.

This Work appeals to a small number of readers, and for them its title will sufficiently explain its purpose. The Author has taken it in hand, because some such book seemed to be wanted. All other accounts of the Foundation of Thomas Sutton have long been out of date: and since the last of them was published much has happened, which, for many reasons, ought not to be passed over without due notice. In this volume the history of Charterhouse has been told with as much accuracy as the writer could attain to. In the record of recent matters he has been helped by a personal acquaintance with the details of its working and by a lively interest in its welfare. For the account of events of more ancient date he has carefully consulted all available authorities, and he has verified, as far as verification was possible, every statement made on the authority of others.

It is not to be expected that such a Work will find favour outside the circle of Carthusians, and probably by them it will be thought wanting in some of the qualities which should characterise such an undertaking, but the writer hopes that his deficiencies will be treated with leniency for the sake of the love which has prompted his labour.

W. H. B.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I. PAGE

CHARTREUSE 1

CHAPTER II.

THOMAS SUTTON 25

CHAPTER III.

THE EARLY DAYS OF THE HOSPITAL 89

CHAPTER IV.

THE MASTERS OF CHARTERHOUSE 114

CHAPTER V.

THE SCHOOLMASTERS OF CHARTERHOUSE 136

CHAPTER VI.

THE POOR BRETHREN OF CHARTERHOUSE 163

CHAPTER VII.

THE REMOVAL OF THE SCHOOL 171

CHAPTER VIII.

PAGE

LIGHTER HOURS 187

CHAPTER IX.

LIST OF THE GOVERNORS OF CHARTERHOUSE 197

CHAPTER X.

NEW STATUTES 206

CHAPTER XI.

GOVERNING BODY OF SCHOOL APPOINTED UNDER THE NEW STATUTES 239

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

La Grande Chartreuse, near Grenoble ... ... *Frontispiece*

Plan of Old Monastery, London ... ... page 1

Plan of Charterhouse, London, 1872 ... ... „ 16

Grand Staircase, London ... ... „ 17

Carthusian Monk ... ... „ 24

Thomas Sutton ... ... „ 25

Recumbent Effigy of Sutton ... ... „ 88

School-room, London, built in 1612 ... ... „ 89

Head Master's House, London ... ... „ 149

School-room, London, built in 1803 ... ... „ 155

Upper Green, London, 1863 ... ... „ 159

Gown-Boy, 1830 ... ... „ 162

Charterhouse, Godalming, South View ... ... „ 171

Chapel—Verites—Library and Class Rooms, Godalming... „ 175

Founder's Court, Godalming ... ... „ 181

Chapel, S.W., Godalming ... ... „ 183

Charterhouse, Godalming ... ... „ 186

Head Master's House—North Side of Chapel, Godalming „ 189

Founder's Tower, Godalming... ... ... „ 195

Old Door of the Chapel, London ... ... „ 196

ERRATA.

p. 96, line 11 from top, for *mediation* read *meditation.*

p. 109, line 10 from bottom, delete *by* and substitute ;

arthusians, Londml.
20.

CHARTERHOUSE,

PAST AND PRESENT.

CHAPTER I.

A local habitation and a name.
Midsummer Night's Dream, v. 1.

The founder of the religious Order of Carthusians was Bruno, a native of Cologne. Of his parentage and early years little is known. It is recorded that after having followed a course of theological study at Paris he returned to his native town, where he soon became a canon in the Church of St. Cunibert. This position he left on his appointment to a stall in the great Cathedral of Reims, of which shortly afterwards he became chancellor. But he did not remain long in his preferment. In the year 1084 he determined to withdraw himself from all secular labours, and to devote his life to the strictest asceticism. The immediate cause to which this resolution

was due is matter of some dispute. The conversion of Bruno is sometimes attributed to a miraculous declaration made at the funeral of a celebrated theologian of Paris, who died in 1082 with the credit of having led a holy and exemplary life. In the midst of the obsequies, it is said, the corpse three times lifted its head from the bier and declared, first that the supposed saint had been arraigned, then that he had been tried, and lastly that he had been condemned by the just judgment of God. This strange history found a place in the Roman breviary, and was removed from it in the reform of that book made in the seventeenth century by Urban VIII. If any credit is to be given to a letter cited by the Jesuit Raynaud, Bruno's retirement from the world was the result of some discussions with his brother canons on the vanity of life. The most probable cause, however, is that he was much hurt at the discreditable conduct of the Archbishop of Reims and the shameful administration of the diocese and cathedral, and that, finding himself powerless to abate the irregularities which afflicted him, he determined to seek a refuge in solitude.

Six friends were persuaded to accompany him into his retirement, and after some deliberation about the choice of a fit locality, they made their way to Grenoble, and applied to Hugh, bishop of that see, for a grant of land within his diocese, that they might give effect to their design. The Bishop readily entered into their plan, and assigned them for the place of their retreat a lonely spot among some mountains in Dauphiné, which form a spur to the Cottian Alps. The home thus given to them lay

in the midst of bare mountains. From the difficulty of approach, and from the clouds which hung over their summits, these hills had received the name of *Chaire Dieu* (in modern French, *Chaise Dieu*), a name which ultimately assumed the form of *Chartreux*. In this solitude the wanderers built themselves a home and here they prospered under the watchful care of Bruno. Their house was called *L'abbaye Chartreuse*, and in later days *La Grande Chartreuse*.* At the end of six years Bruno was called to Rome by Urban II. (Sylvester), that the papal city might have the benefit of the pious labours of so distinguished a priest: but his passion for solitude never abated, and at last, after many applications to the Pope, he gained permission to retire to Calabria. There he died in 1101, having founded in his new dwelling place another monastic house regulated according to the system of La Chartreuse.

Whatever was the success of Bruno's project during his life, the seed he had sown brought forth fruit more than a hundredfold, for we find that there were at one time in Europe 172 monastic houses belonging to the Order he had founded. Of these 75 were in France. The Order was introduced into England by Henry II. In 1181 that king founded a Chartreuse at Witham, in Somersetshire. The first prior of this foundation was Hugh, called Hugh de Grenoble, afterwards Bishop of Lincoln, to whom a large portion of the present cathedral church of that diocese is due. He was canonised in 1514. In 1240

* The English word Charterhouse is plainly the ultimate form of Chartreuse. Therefore it should not be written "Charter-House."

a similar monastery was founded by Ela, a countess of Salisbury. In 1343 Nicholas Cantiloup built and endowed a Carthusian monastery at Bella Valle (Belvoir), in Nottinghamshire. In 1371 was founded the London Charterhouse. In 1378 Michael de la Pole founded a house for this Order at Hull (anciently known as Kingston-upon-Hull). This is still in existence in the form of an alms-house. The sixth was founded in 1381 near Coventry by William de la Zouche. The seventh in 1397 by Thomas, Earl of Nottingham, at Epworth, in Leicestershire.* In 1398 Thomas de Holland, Duke of Surrey, Earl of Kent, founded a Carthusian monastery at Mount Grace, in Yorkshire. The last foundation of this Order was due to Henry V. In 1414 he built the House of Jesus-of-Bethlehem of Sheen.

In the fourteenth century the reputation of the Carthusians stood very high throughout Europe: but the record of the piety and fortunes of the religious Order cannot find a place here. We are more immediately concerned with the rise and progress of the house in London, which was founded mainly by a Flemish nobleman, known by the name of Walter de Manny,† Lord of Manny, in the province of Hainault. This gentleman escorted Philippa of Hainault to England for her marriage with King Edward III. His residence at the English court was prolonged for some years, and in the fifth year of his majesty's reign Walter de Manny received the honour of knighthood from the hands of the King

* In later times the birth-place of John Wesley.

† Froissart writes this name *Mauny*.

with much ceremony. Thus attached to the court of England he became a faithful adherent of Edward. After having done valiant service in the French wars, during which he was taken prisoner, he was on his return to England made a peer of the realm and a knight of the Order of the Garter. He was a man of deep religious feeling, and devoted much of his life to the furtherance of good works. Greatly distressed by the miseries consequent on the terrible plague of 1345–9, he formed a design of alleviating as far as might be the suffering it caused among the poor. With the view of rendering such aid as lay in his power in this terrible emergency, he purchased from the Master and Brethren of St. Bartholomew's Hospital a site known by the name of the Spittle (*i.e.* Hospital) Croft. This land adjoined a field of three acres, anciently known as "No man's land." Dr. Ralph Stratford, Bishop of London, had bought those three acres, and erected on the spot a chapel, in which masses were to be said for the repose of the dead. The use to which the land was thus put had occasioned a change in its name, and the field was thenceforward known as Pardon Church Yard. Sir Walter de Manny intended in the first instance to add the Spittle Croft to Pardon Church Yard, and so to provide an extension of the burial ground. This purpose was so far carried out that 50,000 bodies were buried there. The original deed of gift is still preserved among the records of the Charterhouse in London. It sets forth that the donor, moved by pious regard for his fellow citizens, had acquired thirteen acres and one rod of land outside the bar of West Smithfield, and devoted the same as a place of

burial, adding thereto a chapel to the honour of God and of the Feast of the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary. After this dedication of the Spittle Croft, its name was changed to "New-Church Hawe" (*i.e.* the Close of the new Church).

The information to be gained from old documents respecting the ownership of this land is somewhat obscure. The obscurity gives rise to one difficult question on the transfer of the land. Michael de Northbergh was the successor of the above mentioned Ralph Stratford in the see of London. Bishop Northbergh had formed an idea of erecting and endowing a Carthusian monastery: and at his death, in 1361, he left £2000 and a plot of land for the furtherance of his plan. Now this land was the very spot which has been above described as New-Churche Hawe (locus Newechurche-hawe vulgariter nuncupatus, ubi est ecclesia Beatæ Mariæ Virginis). The will of the Bishop also states that he purchased this land of Sir Walter de Manny (quem locum et patronatum ejusdem perquisivi de domino Waltero de Manny, milite). At what time and under what circumstances this transfer took place it is not easy to say, but the words of the Bishop leave no doubt of its reality. It seems reasonable to suppose that Sir Walter was in the confidence of the Bishop in regard to the intended foundation, and that after the death of the prelate the knight devoted himself to the completion of the plan which was a favourite project of both. It is however certain that in 1371 he founded on the spot named by Bishop Northbergh a Carthusian monastery (domum Monachorum). John Lustote was appointed the first prior, with the

consent of the Prior of La Grande Chartreuse, in Savoy.* Further, it was provided that prayers should be offered in the monastery for the souls of certain departed persons, and the document is closed with attestations made in the usual form.† This deed bears date 45 Edward III.—*i.e.* 1372. The building was finished in 1371 by Sir Walter alone, "the Bishop being dead" (mortuo episcopo). Hence the honour of the foundation of the Carthusian monastery in London is divided between Michael de Northbergh, Bishop of London, and Sir Walter de Manny, Lord of Hainault. Sir Walter had originally projected a scheme for endowing a college of twelve Capellani,‡ but this plan he ultimately abandoned in order to lend himself to the completion of the Bishop's design, and the monastery was consequently called a Double Monastery (*i.e.* the work of two founders). The license for the foundation of this monastery was granted by Edward III. on the 6th February 1372. It seems right therefore to say that the monastery was founded at this date.

A papal bull of Urban VI. (1378) recognises the house as the joint foundation of the Bishop and Sir Walter de Manny, and makes further provision for its maintenance. At the end of 1372 the good knight died: his body was

* The application for this consent was an act of courtesy, not of obligation. For it was not till 1508 that all the houses of Carthusians were made dependent on the Prior of La Grande Chartreuse, and the chapter general of the Order. This was done by a bull issued by Julius II.

† One of the witnesses was William de Walworth, Sheriff, afterwards Lord Mayor of London.

‡ Capellani (see Du Cange, *in voc.*) were keepers of sacred relics.

carried to the chapel of the newly erected monastery, and buried in the middle of the choir. The funeral was attended by the King, his children, and the barons and prelates of England.* An alabaster tomb† recorded his memory. The monastery thus built and endowed continued for many years the works of charity and devotion which were promoted by its Founders. The precepts of St. Bruno were observed in all their strictness. The Carthusians adopted generally the rule of St. Benedict, but special additions were made to these regulations. No breath of censure ever passed over the fair reputation of the prior or the monks of Charterhouse. Some testimony of the character borne by the house in the beginning of the sixteenth century may be derived from the fact that Sir Thomas More and Dean Colet both found a temporary retreat from the cares of the world in this asylum. But an excellent character gave little protection; for in the twenty-sixth year of King Henry VIII. the Carthusians were visited by that storm which overwhelmed all the monastic foundations of England. In April 1534 the prior, John Houghton (Howgton), and the procurator, Humphrey Middlemore (Midylmore), were imprisoned for their refusal to accept the act of succession,‡ to acknowledge the King to be head of the Church of England and to renounce the Pope. A month's durance, and probably a sincere desire to gain the best possible terms for their house, subdued the obstinacy of the recusant friars: they

* Froissart. † Not a trace of this tomb remains.

‡ Their main objection to this act was, that it legalised the King's marriage with Anne Boleyn.

made their submission, but no submission could be of any avail. It was as in the old fable of the wolf and the lamb. The King was hungry and the friars were weak. The story of their sufferings is told by a surviving brother, Maurice Channey, who has left an account of the latter days of the monastery in a work called "The Sufferings of Eighteen Carthusians." * His object is to perpetuate the memory of Prior Houghton and his monks as martyrs for the Truth, and this praise they well deserve. They suffered, as More and Fisher suffered, for what they believed to be true; and though it may be freely conceded that the time had fully come for the breaking of the spiritual yoke of Rome from the neck of England—that the monastic system had outlived its day, and was no longer, as it had once been, an aid, but rather a hindrance to the progress of civilisation—yet it is very well known that the spoliation of monasteries in England was prompted, not by zeal for truth or political foresight, but by greed and lust. Houghton was faithful to his trust as prior of Charterhouse: he would not change his religious belief at the bidding of the King, and therefore he and his monks perished, "splintered in pieces, for so only could their resistance be overcome, by the iron sceptre and the iron hand which held it." † These were among the last words spoken by the martyred prior as he stood at the scaffold: "I call to witness Almighty God and all good people, and I beseech you all here present to bear witness for me in

* Passio Octodecim Carthusianorum, auctore M. Channey.

† Froude's History of England, c. ix, p. 363, *seqq.*

the day of judgment, that, being here to die, I declare it is from no obstinate rebellious spirit that I do not obey the King, but because I fear to offend the majesty of God. Our holy mother, the Church, has decreed otherwise than the King and Parliament have decreed, and therefore, rather than disobey the Church, I am ready to suffer." The spirit that breathes in these words is that which in many different forms has animated the champions of English freedom, and has maintained for our country the heritage of liberty and prosperity which we now enjoy.

The violent dispersion of the Carthusian brotherhood was of course followed by the seizure of the revenues by which their house had been supported. The annual income at the dissolution amounted to £642. 4*s*. 6*d*. The site which had been so long dedicated to pious and charitable uses was granted to John Bridges and Thomas Hale, in consideration of the safe keeping of the King's Hales and Pavilions,* which had been stored there for some time before. In 1545 it was given in perpetuity to Sir Edward North, Bridges and Hale receiving a compensation. In the grant it is valued at £50 per annum. But the gift well nigh proved fatal to the recipient. Dr. Bearcroft relates the following story, which, as he says, he extracted from a little book called "Some Notes concerning the Life of Edward, Lord North, &c.," written by Dudley, Lord North. The account rests on the authority of one of his lordship's attendants. "Once early in the morning there came from the King to Charterhouse, then the mansion house of Sir Edward

* Fishing nets and tents.

North, a messenger, known to be no friend of his, to command his immediate repair to the court, which message was delivered with some harshness. This was so terrible in the suddenness and other circumstances, as he observed his master to tremble at the delivery of it, who yet, finding it dangerous to use the least delay, hasted thither, and was admitted speedily into the King's presence with this his servant attendant on him. The King was then walking, and continued doing so with great earnestness, and every now and then cast an angry look upon him, which was received with a still and sober carriage; at last the King broke out into these words, 'We are informed that you have cheated us of certain lands in Middlesex;' whereunto, having received none other than a plain and humble negation, after some little time he replied, 'How was it then? Did we give these lands to you?' Whereunto Sir Edward answered, 'Yes, Sir, your Majesty was pleased to do so.' Whereupon, having paused a little while, the King put on a milder countenance, and calling him to a cupboard conferred privately with him a long time; whereby, said this servant, I saw the King could not spare my master's service as yet. But whether or no the cause lay in the King's occasions, or in the other's humble behaviour and answers, must be left to judgment, for as Solomon saith, 'a soft answer turneth away wrath.'"

Sir Edward North was a supple courtier. The son of a London mercer, he had won his way to several distinguished offices under Henry VIII., and he was appointed one of the sixteen Governors of the Kingdom during the minority of Edward VI. He devoted himself first to

Mary Tudor, and then to Jane Gray, but ultimately decided in favour of Mary, and was among the first who publicly declared for her. He was made a baron in 1554. During the tenure of this Lord North Queen Elizabeth spent several days at Charterhouse. Having been dismissed from the Privy Council for some reason unknown, he retired into private life, and died December 31st 1564, leaving Charterhouse to his son Roger, Lord North. This nobleman was in possession of the main part of the estate for a few months only, for on the 31st May 1565 he sold it to the Duke of Norfolk for £2500, only excepting that part on the east side of the chapel, which was then the mansion house of Lord North, and in later times became the residence of the Duke of Rutland. It still bears the name of Rutland Place. From 1565 to 1569 the Charterhouse was the Duke of Norfolk's town residence. In the year last named he was committed to the Tower for entertaining a project of marriage with Mary Queen of Scots. After an imprisonment of some months' duration, he was released on his promise to dismiss all thought of such an alliance and returned to Charterhouse, where he was under the surveillance of Sir Henry Nevil. During this period of his life the Duke spent no little time and money on beautifying his new residence. The account of this work will be given hereafter.

But he was unable to keep the promise he had given. After a brief interval he was once more a conspirator against Elizabeth, and a traitorous correspondent of the Scottish Queen. In September 1571 he was arrested for the second time, and on the information wrung from his secretary Hickford, he was convicted of treason, and

beheaded on Tower Hill. The Duke of Norfolk has sometimes been lauded as a martyr in the cause of religion. But he was not of the stuff of which martyrs are made. Apart from his religious inconstancy, it must be borne in mind that while he was carrying on the correspondence in which he entertained the project of marrying the Queen of Scots, Bothwell, the husband of that unfortunate princess, was still alive, and it seems very probable that the Duchess of Norfolk was alive too. By the Duke's attainder, Charterhouse or, as it was then called, Howard House, was forfeited to the Crown. But Elizabeth was not implacable. Ultimately the confiscated estates were in part at least restored to the sons of the Duke, and Howard House fell to the share of Thomas, Lord Howard, his second son, but the eldest son of the second Duchess, Margaret, daughter of Lord Audley. In the possession of Lord Howard it remained for some few years, and King James, whose regard for the Howards was doubtless quickened by the memory of the Duke's devotion to his mother, made Howard House his first halting place when he reached the capital in 1603. He was escorted thither by a grand procession, consisting of the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and 500 of the principal citizens on horseback, and there he kept his court for four days. He arrived in London on the 7th of May, and on the 11th, before he left the house, he conferred the honour of knighthood on more than eighty gentlemen. The noble owner of the house he created Earl of Suffolk. It is probable that the brilliancy of King James' visit could not wholly scatter the gloomy memories of Howard House, and the Earl of Suffolk

availed himself of an early opportunity of parting with it by sale, for the sum of £13,000, to Mr. Thomas Sutton.

The property which thus came into the hands of Mr. Sutton consisted of thirteen acres of land, on which stood the Chapel of the Monastery, the banqueting hall of the Duke of Norfolk and his reception rooms, a large portion of the building which is now the Master's Lodge, the court known as Washhouse Court, with all the monastic buildings or what remained of them. On the north side of the hall the Duke had built a cloister, still standing, to serve as a covered way to the Tennis Court, which was on the site formerly occupied by the Head Master's house, and now covered by the large hall of the Merchant Taylors' School. The terrace walk over the cloister was an addition made in later times. Much of the fabric as it was in Sutton's day, or shortly after his death, still remains, and this is probably the fittest place for a short account of its condition and the principal changes in it.

The present chapel is an enlargement of the chapel of the monastery. The ante-chapel, which is now a baptistery, and a portion of the south wall, are the only remaining parts of the building in which the monks worshipped. In an obscure corner of the roof of the ante-chapel, which was the latest addition to the monastic building, the date 1512 may be deciphered. The proportions of the edifice were entirely destroyed by the alterations which were made in the course of its adaptation to the use of Sutton's Hospital. The north wall was removed, and gave place to an arcade, so placed

as to divide the new building into two equal parts. The pitched roof was replaced by a flat ceiling, decorated with intersecting lines of the kind often seen in Jacobean structures. In 1614 the Founder's tomb was placed at the north-east corner of the chapel, which underwent very little alteration between that time and 1824, when the increasing numbers of the School required some addition to the sittings. In that year a new bay was built on the north side to provide seats for the boarders. Over these seats was erected a gallery in which were pews for some of the officers of Charterhouse. The body of the chapel was occupied by the Poor Brethren. The scholars (Gown Boys) were provided for in some seats placed in front of the Founder's tomb, and the boarders (Oppidans) sat in the bay above mentioned. The building in its ultimate form had but slight claims to architectural elegance, and it certainly did not give the best opportunities for devotion.*

From the chapel we pass into a small piazza, which for many years was open on the south side. In 1825 this side was closed by the erection of a wall pierced with six glazed windows. Underneath the piazza is a large vault, and the leger stones with which it is paved record the names of the dead who lie buried there. In recent years its walls have been decorated with tablets in memory of some distinguished Carthusians, among whom are John Leech, W. M. Thackeray, and Archdeacon Hale, and by a memorial to the members of the School who fell

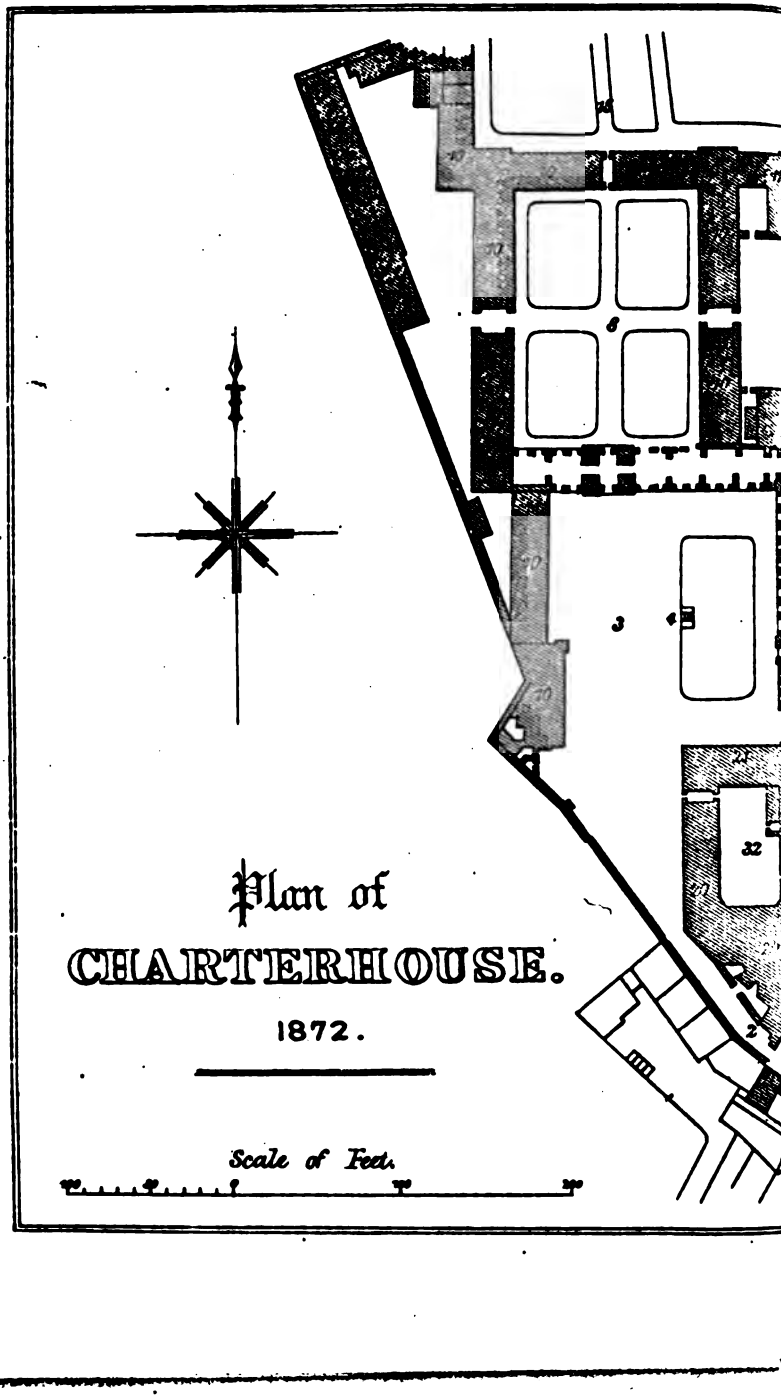
* Sermon on Founder's day, 1875, by Professor (now Archdeacon) Palmer.

in the Crimean War and the Indian Mutiny. On the north side of the chapel cloister is Brooke Hall, an account of which is given elsewhere.* On the west side the cloister opens into a lobby, from which the dining hall of the Pensioners is approached. This is a noble room. Its present form is due to the Duke of Norfolk. Among its carved decorations may be seen the letters T N (Thomas Norfolk) and the date 1570. It seems probable that, with the intention of making a spacious dining hall for his mansion, the Duke raised the walls of the building he found on the spot, and gave the roof the shape it now has, employing in its construction the massive oaken brackets which had supported the ancient beams. This conjecture is strengthened by several considerations, especially by the appearance of the buttress against the outer wall, which bears evident signs of alteration. It may be also supposed that when the Duke raised the walls he added the clerestory lights to the Tudor windows which already existed. The roof above mentioned is of an unusual form. It is flat at the sides, and breaks into a semicircular arch in the centre. The dimensions of the hall are as follows: length 50 ft., width 25 ft. 9 in., height, to the soffits, 29 ft., to the centre of coved ceiling 34 ft. 6 in. Its decorations are in the style of the early Renaissance, and they present a very beautiful specimen of that school of Art. The screen, which is worthy of careful examination, is of the same date with that of the hall of the Middle Temple, with which it corresponds closely in design. This latter

* See Notices of Schoolmasters.

REFERENCE TO PLAN.

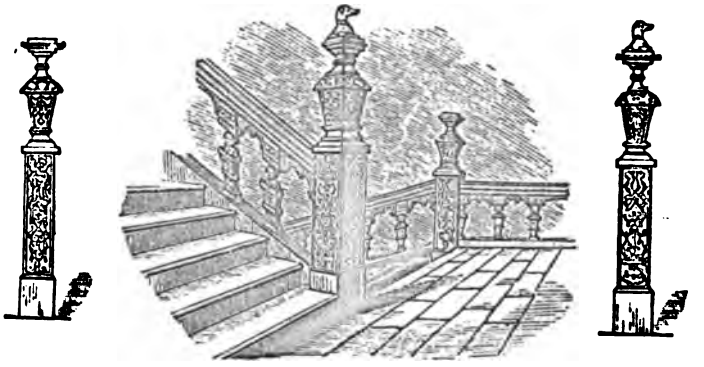
1. Entrance Gate.
2. Old Gateway of Monastery.
3. Preacher's Court.
4. Pump.
5. Preacher's House.
6. Pensioners' Matron's House.
7. Manciple's House.
8. Pensioners' Court.
9. Stables.
10. Pensioners' Rooms.
11. Gown-Boys' Matron's House.
12. Scholars' Court.
13. Head Master's House.
14. Gown-Boys'.
15. Burial Ground.
16. Master's Garden.
17. Cloisters.
18. Gown-Boys' Dining Hall, Library, and Governors' Room over.
19. Great Hall.
20. Registrar's House.
21. Offices.
22. Master's Lodge.
23. Brooke Hall.
24. Chapel Cloister.
25. Chapel.
26. Day Boys'.
27. Usher's House.
28. Upper Green.
29. Part of Under Green.
30. Racquet Court (open).
31. Master's Court.
32. Washhouse or Poplar Court.
33. Entrance Court.
34. Registrar's Office.
35. Kitchen.
36. Medical Officer's House.


Plan of
CHARTERHOUSE.
1872.
Scale of Feet.

29
SCHOOL
28
30
31
RUTLAND PLACE
PART OF CHARTERHOUSE SQUARE
33

work, however, is much larger than the screen in Charterhouse.

On the north side runs a gallery, and at the west is a deeper one for musicians. The hall has a massive chimney-piece of stone, the upper part of which is later than the Duke of Norfolk's time. Part of its decoration consists of two pieces of ordnance and some powder barrels, intended to commemorate the military services rendered by Sutton in the north of England.* At the upper end of the hall is a dais, extending into a handsome bay window, containing several curious fragments of painted glass, which seem for the most part to be of Dutch workmanship. From the wall above the dais the Founder's portrait looks down the hall. In former times



the officers of the Hospital dined here with the Pensioners, but this arrangement was altered some years since, and the dinner of the officials was transferred to Brooke Hall.

* See Life of Sutton, *infra*.

The Gown Boys' dining hall may be entered from the Pensioners' Hall. It is a low-ceiled room, containing many points of considerable interest for the antiquary. From the lobby above mentioned a broad handsome staircase leads to a splendid suite of rooms.

The most remarkable of these is that which is known as the Governors' Room. It is so called because for many years after the foundation of the Hospital the assemblies of the Governors were held there. Its dimensions are: length 41 ft. 6 in., width 22 ft. 6 in., height 15 ft. 11 in.; the bay at the north end measures 15 ft. 6 in. by 8 ft. 6 in., it is 11 ft. 6 in. high. The decoration is of the same date with that of the Hall. The ceiling is highly ornamented with geometrical figures, heraldic lions, and shields emblazoned with coats of arms of several members of the family of the Norfolk Howards. These were for some years covered with whitewash, but their colours have recently been restored, and the ceiling ranks among the best specimens of that kind of work. In the border the well-known motto of the Duke (Sola virtus invicta), in gold letters, occurs several times. On the walls are some ancient tapestries, one of which is said to represent the siege of Calais, but it is not easy to put an interpretation on them. Originally they served as an arras, but they fell into partial decay: the main parts, however, are still preserved; these have been carefully put together and now serve as wall decorations in large panels. The mantelpiece of this room is a very remarkable work. On each side of the fireplace are two Tuscan pillars. On the panels between these pillars are figures in medallions—one of them a

representation of Mars, the other of Minerva. The lintel is decorated by three rather rude paintings, black on gold grounds, representing Faith, Hope, and Charity. Above the lintel is a ledge, supporting on either side of it a pair of Ionic columns. At the foot of these pairs of columns are two scriptural scenes—one representing the Annunciation and the other the Last Supper; in these the colours are differently employed, the figures being in gold and the ground black. Between these two pictures are the arms of Thomas Sutton, supported by two cherubs of unusual rotundity. The panels which divide the columns are covered with various ornaments, chiefly gilded scrolls. The centre panel displays the royal arms. On the sides of it are seen the letters C R. This panel, placed there about 1660, has obviously been substituted for the one inserted by the Duke of Norfolk, which no doubt was decorated with an emblazonment of his own coat of arms. The most cursory view would suggest the strange disparity of the different portions of this work. The scrolls are well designed, and most carefully executed. They supply indeed an example of the skill of the best Florentine decorators of the age. The pictures of the Annunciation and the Lord's Supper are not without merit, but many portions of the mantelpiece are gross and clumsy: the very disparity, however, has a peculiar interest, for several phases of the history of Charterhouse are indicated by this composite result.

In this room Elizabeth and James I. held courts. Indeed, almost all the illustrious characters of England, and not a few of the great men of foreign countries, from the days of Henry VIII. down to the death of

Charles I., were acquainted with it; some of them as inhabitants of the mansion, some as attendants on Queen Elizabeth or James I.; some as visitors of the noble owners of the mansion, some as Governors of Mr. Sutton's charity. After the triumph of the Republicans, all the leading men of that party attended meetings in it; and since the restoration of the Stuarts the Governors have always been men of the highest eminence in Church and State.*

Outside the Governors' Room, and serving as a sort of ante-chamber to it, is the Library. This name is due to the interesting collection of books there preserved. The books were the property of Daniel Wray, Esq., Deputy-Teller of the Exchequer, who in his day (1701–1783) had a great reputation. According to his epitaph, said to have been written by his friend Lord Hardwicke, "he was eminently distinguished for his critical skill, for his knowledge of the Arts, and for his correct taste in polite literature." His wealth was devised in the first instance to his widow. She survived him twenty years, and "with a delicacy of judgment and feeling habitual to the current of her life, she gave his library to the Charterhouse," because he had been educated in the School there. The School has been removed, but the Library is retained in London, where it is of little use, and does not fulfil the intention of the donor. The portrait of Mr. Wray, hung above the fire-place, is a good copy of a picture by Dance, afterwards known as Sir N. Holland. The original painting was bequeathed by Mrs. Wray to

* Malcolm's Londinium Redivivum.

Queen's College, Cambridge. There is also a medallion likeness of him by an Italian artist called Pozzo.

On the same floor with the Governors' Room and the Library are the chief rooms of the Master's Lodge. Three of these deserve special notice. The room which is first entered from the landing of the staircase is panelled up to the ceiling. It has a carved mantelpiece of Jacobean work, somewhat heavy in execution, representing the figures of Faith, Hope, and Charity. The stately room beyond it is very striking, as well on account of its proportions as of its decorations. The ceiling is ornamented with delicate wreaths of flowers, gracefully intertwined: the mantelpiece belongs generally to the style of art which is seen in the Governors' Room, but, taken as a whole, it is in taste and execution far superior to that specimen. On each side of the fireplace is a Caryatid of excellent workmanship; these figures support a plinth, covered with incised arabesques, carefully wrought, and leaning forward so as to form a bracket for a shelf. From this shelf rise two pairs of Corinthian pillars, resting on quadrangular pedestals: the space between each pair of pillars is panelled, and the panels are filled with delicate scroll work. All the arabesques and scrolls are in gold; for some years they had been blotted out of memory by successive coats of white paint. Archdeacon Hale examined below the surface and discovered beneath the paint traces of the decoration in gold. Under his care the beauty of the work was restored. The Archdeacon also placed in the centre of the mantelpiece the portrait of Thomas Sutton, which is said to be the oldest likeness of him. It was engraved by Vertue

in 1737, as a frontispiece for Dr. Bearcroft's "History of Charterhouse."

This room and the room beyond it are also ornamented with many full length figures of the time of Charles II. They are portraits of the King, the Archbishop of Canterbury (Sheldon), the Duke of Monmouth, the Duke of Shrewsbury, the Lord Chancellor (Shaftesbury), the Duke of Buckingham (George Villiers), and Earl Craven. It is said that these portraits formerly belonged to the Duchess of Monmouth, and that after the arrest of her husband she gave them into the care of one of the officers of Sutton's Hospital, intending to claim their restoration in happier days. The happier days never came for her, and the portraits have remained for nearly 200 years in Charterhouse. The Master's drawing room is now used for the meetings of the Governors of the Hospital, and the smaller room beyond it serves the purpose of an ante-chamber when assemblies are held. In this smaller room are several portraits: one of Thomas Burnet* is very fine, but the majority of them have no special merit. The mantelpiece is the work of Chippendale, and it is a fair specimen of the craft of that master of upholstery. Of the other portraits which furnish the Master's Lodge the most deserving of notice are a full length likeness of the Founder, of unknown date and authorship, and a portrait of Dr. Raine.† These are on the landing-place, outside the room just spoken of.

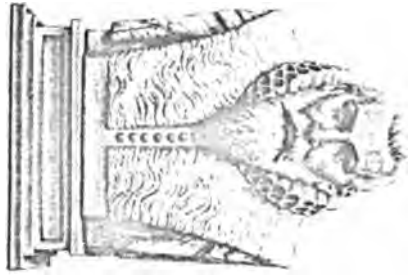
A quadrangle is formed by two sides of the Master's Lodge, the north wall of the Dining Hall and the west side

* See Notices of Masters. † See Notices of Schoolmasters.

of Washhouse Court, now part of the Registrar's House. This court was outside of the monastery proper, and is supposed, with good reason, to have been the court of the guests who were entertained liberally by the prior and his associates in office. The small quadrangle known as Washhouse Court, and formerly called Poplar Court, contains many interesting fragments of ancient architecture. This is the oldest of all the buildings in Charterhouse. The wall decorations which still ornament the brickwork are of very great interest, and much that is now to be seen there has remained unmoved for 400 or 500 years.

The above description is but a meagre outline of the splendid property which passed into the hands of Thomas Sutton. The nucleus of the establishment was, as we have seen, the plot called "No man's land." This is now the area of Charterhouse Square; and the Governors of Sutton's Hospital keep their rights intact by receiving from each occupier of a house opening into the square a nominal rent for the privilege of leaving his house by the front door. The mansions which occupied the sides of the square in the days of King James I.—Lord Rutland's, Lord Tankerville's, Lord Dorset's and others—opened into large gardens on the spot now occupied by the densely populated neighbourhood of Goswell Street and Aldersgate Street. But to return to Charterhouse: there are still scattered about its precincts many interesting relics of the days when the pious monks of St. Bruno had their dwelling-place within it. The massive entrance gate, with its original wicket, was the gate of the religious house: here and there in the stones

with which walls have been built or floors paved there is much to excite the interest of all who care to know something of those who were before them, and the eye of the antiquary can still discover in many a crumbling doorway and half hidden niche, in many a curious combination of materials, in fragments of masonry, in ancient staircases, historic traces of the religious Order once planted on the spot which is still called the Charterhouse.



CHAPTER II.

Omnes laudate Dominum,
Fontem perennem boni,
Recolentes Fundatoris
Memoriam Suttoni.

Carmen Carthusianum.

The new possessor of Charterhouse was a man of no ordinary kind. He was one of a class, happily numerous in England, whose history shews how rectitude and intelligence, firmness and energy, may win a way against all obstacles to the highest ranks of society, and make a man independent of those accessories of fortune, which, highly prized as they are, have not unfrequently been found rather a hindrance than a help to advancement. Sutton may be regarded in some sense as a representative man. He was not only a type of the straightforward perseverance which we claim as a national characteristic, but he also furnishes an example of the value of free institutions, and their tendency, even when immature, to develop the character and call out the energies. Very little can be said of the ancestry of Thomas Sutton. He was born at Knaith, in Lincolnshire. For the date of his birth we are indebted to the record of his age at the time of his death. He lived 79 years, and died in 1611. Therefore he was born in 1532. In those days parish registers had

not yet an existence.* His father, though not a person of high distinction, was of some standing in the city of Lincoln, where he appears to have held the office of Steward to the Courts.† It is consequently inferred that he belonged to the legal profession. Mr. Richard Sutton, the father of the well-known Thomas Sutton, married a lady of Yorkshire family named Stapleton. There appears to be sufficient evidence that she was related to the Stapletons of Carleton, whose ancestor, Sir Miles Stapleton, was one of the first knights of the Order of the Garter.‡

In the early youth of Thomas Sutton his father became acquainted with Dr. Cox, who was tutor to King Edward VI., had been head master of Eton College, and was said to have assisted Lily in the compilation of his grammar. This acquaintance led the father to send his son to Eton, which must in those days have been a very important step, owing to the great distance which separated the famous college of Henry VI. from the city of Lincoln: but there is good reason for supposing that the advice of Dr. Cox was acted upon, and Sutton was in after years so well satisfied with it that he bequeathed a legacy to the children of the prelate on whose suggestion his school had been chosen. From Eton he is said to have passed in due time to St. John's College, Cambridge,

* The order that parish registers should be kept was issued about 1535.

† His ancestors were not so low that his descent should be a shame to his Vertues: nor yet so great but that his Vertu might be an ornament to his Birth.—*Herne.*

‡ There were originally twenty-six knights of the Garter. The name of Sir M. Stapleton is seventeenth on the list.—*Froissart.*

where he was matriculated 27th November 1551. If the custom of the times be taken into consideration, there was something very unusual in the postponement of his admission to the University to the age of nineteen. It is not easy to say whether this consideration supplies a valid reason for doubting the identity of the Founder of Charterhouse with the student who was matriculated as a sizar (Quadrantarius*) at the date above named. It may have been that men's minds were so much unsettled at that period, that delays such as this were not uncommon: it is also well known that in those days students were not always matriculated in their first year. The uncertain condition of the times has been assigned as a reason why he took no degree at Cambridge, and he is supposed to have left the University in consequence of the changes brought about by the accession of Queen Mary. But it is after all very improbable that the Founder of Charterhouse ever was a student at Cambridge; for, first, it is not likely that Richard Sutton would have sent his son as a sizar to St. John's, and again it is still more unlikely that, if Thomas Sutton had belonged to that college, he would have forgotten it in the disposal of his wealth; for in his lifetime he was a benefactor to Peterhouse,† and in his will he made liberal bequests to Magdalene and Jesus Colleges. It is however certain that he became a student

* There were two grades of Quadrantarii (farthingers). They are thus described: (1) qui expendunt hebdomadatim xii^{d}, (2) qui minus quam xii nummos, quomodo frequentissime vivunt, hebdomadatim expendunt.

† This is stated in the will of Andrew Perne, D.D., Master of Peterhouse, dated February 25th, 1588.

of Lincoln's Inn, but the study of the law was soon exchanged for foreign travel; and it seems more than probable that the religious persecution of Mary's reign was in some degree the cause of his departure from England. His habit of mind and his education enabled him to profit by his long experience of foreign countries, and he came home with a full store of knowledge, gained by careful observation. He is said to have travelled through Holland, France, Italy and Spain. The date of his return to England is uncertain, but it may be concluded that it was long delayed: for it is known that Richard Sutton, his father, died on the 27th July 1558, and it is also known that his will, of which Thomas Sutton was sole acting executor, was not proved till the 22nd February 1562. By this will Sutton was provided with such a competence that he was able to dispose of his time and services according to his own inclination, and consequently, according to the practice of aspiring young men of that day, he attached himself to Thomas, Duke of Norfolk. After some time spent in the household of the Duke, he became secretary to the Earl of Warwick, and occasionally transacted business for Warwick's brother, the Earl of Leicester. It may be concluded that he left this service in 1569, for there is extant a deed of gift of £3. 6*s*. 8*d*. out of the manor of Walkington, in Yorkshire, from Ambrose, Earl of Warwick and Dame Ann, his wife, to their well-beloved servant, Thomas Sutton, for life. This grant appears to be a retiring pension.

In later days he leased from the Earl the manor of Walkington for twenty-one years; but this was a matter of business. Lord Warwick had evidently formed a high

opinion of Mr. Sutton's power of organisation, for he entrusted him with a charge which would seem altogether foreign to the tastes and occupations of one who is known chiefly as a London merchant. The Earl was Master-General of the Ordnance, and he appointed Sutton to be his subordinate at Berwick; a position of great responsibility, for the Popish reaction in the North had at this time broken out into open war, and the rebels were led by the Earls of Northumberland and Westmorland. To religious zeal was added a strong feeling of compassion for the Queen of Scots, and this outbreak had at one time assumed very serious proportions. The town of Berwick, being on the Scotch frontier, was exposed to the rudest storms of war. In his new office Mr. Sutton shewed such "loyalty, valour and wisdom," that he was promoted, on the recommendation of the Earls of Warwick and Leicester, to the honourable post of Master-General of the Ordnance in the North for life. The patent is dated 18th February 1569. In the next mention made of Thomas Sutton, he is spoken of as one of the chief of the 1500 men, who in 1573 marched into Scotland to help the Earl of Morton, then regent of that kingdom. On this occasion he commanded one of the batteries which were brought to bear on Edinburgh Castle, held by Maitland of Lidington and Kirkaldy of Grange, and he must share the honour of the speedy reduction of that formidable stronghold.

To his ability and care are ascribed the excellent fortifications of Berwick. He employed on this work the best engineering art of the day, and he furnished the garrison with "a surprising plenty of all warlike stores."

On the restoration of quiet in the North, Sutton turned his attention from warlike to mercantile pursuits. During his service he had been struck by the undeveloped mineral wealth which lay buried in the coal mines of Northumberland, and he secured a lease of some land in the North, first from the Bishop of Durham, and afterwards from the Crown, for a period of seventy-nine years. Nor was he slow to profit by the opportunity. He did not return to London till 1580, and then he brought with him two horseloads of money and was reputed worth £50,000. This rapid accumulation of wealth, not so uncommon in our own times, had then no parallel; and if the difference in the value of money be taken into account, it will be seen that the fortune of Sutton could hardly fail to attract general attention. It was said that his purse was fuller than Queen Elizabeth's exchequer.

About the middle of 1582 Sutton married Elizabeth, widow of John Dudley, of Stoke Newington, Esq. This lady was the daughter of John Gardiner, of Grove Place, Chalfont St. Giles, in Buckinghamshire. At the death of Mr. Dudley she inherited half his fortune, which was considerable, the other half falling to her daughter. A moiety of the manor of Stoke Newington was a part of her inheritance, and at this manor Mr. Sutton had a country seat, his London house being at Broken Wharf, in the parish of St. Mary Somerset. The house is thus described in Stow's "Survey of London"—"A large building of stone, with arched gates, which messuage I find in the forty-third year of Henry III. pertaining to Hugh Bygot, and in the eleventh of Edward II. to

Thomas de Brotherton, the King's* brother, Earl of Norfolk." Having thus established his household, Mr. Sutton devoted himself with his usual energy and intelligence to mercantile pursuits. His unbounded credit gave him great facilities for successful trade, by which his wealth was daily increased. His mercantile operations were extended to foreign towns, and he had at one time as many as thirty agents in different parts of the continent of Europe. His foreign correspondence served him in good stead, not only by helping him to amass money, but also by enabling him to contribute to the rescue of his country in the hour of her greatest need. Sir Francis Walsingham, the able minister of Elizabeth, had received intelligence that Philip of Spain had written to the Pope a detailed account of his intended attack on England, and asked a blessing on it. Walsingham contrived to get possession of the King's letter or its contents, and so became acquainted with all the preparations for the famous Spanish Armada. Large supplies of money were required for the completion of Philip's design; these were to be furnished chiefly by the Bank of Genoa. Sutton lent his aid to the frustration of Philip's plan by buying up through his agents the chief drafts on Genoa and withdrawing the amount of them just before Philip's demand was made, so that the bank was compelled to protest the King's bills, and thus his plan was delayed. Delay was defeat. For the national spirit was effectually roused and the most urgent preparations were

* Thomas, Earl of Norfolk, was the King's half brother. He was the eldest son of Margaret of France, the second wife of Edward I.

made that the visit of the Spanish King might be duly received. The plan by which Philip was defeated is due to Walsingham, but the mercantile credit of Sutton lent an aid to its success. The credit of this service to the State has been claimed for Sir Thomas Gresham: but that claim is sufficiently disposed of by the consideration that Sir Thomas died in 1579. Nor was this the only help Sutton rendered to his country; for in the list of the English ships which met the navy of Philip we read among the volunteers the name of "The Bark Sutton," of seventy tons and thirty men, and there is no doubt who was its owner. One source of wealth in those days was found in the questionable practice of privateering. But questionable as that may seem now, it was then held to be not only not disreputable, but highly praiseworthy, to make money by reprisals on the ships of the enemy. It is said that the Queen herself had a share in Sir John Hawkins' expeditions, and noblemen considered it no discredit to hold letters of marque from the Lord High Admiral of England. Mr. Sutton's privateers took on one occasion a galleon worth £20,000.

The rich hath many friends. This proverb was fully verified in the case of Thomas Sutton. The fame of his wealth drew round him a swarm of needy and importunate suitors. Among those who thus utilised him were persons of high distinction, whose bonds for money lent are still among the papers left behind by Mr. Sutton. The begging letters were very numerous. These letters shew many different styles, and contain claims of various kinds. Their petitions are sometimes backed by very strange arguments. I extract three specimens, which

have been printed before.* The first is from Lady Cumberland:—

"Sir,

"My credit and estymacõn in the world is no lesse nowe than ever heretofore it hath bene, howsoever you conceave thereof; and for the money I have made shifte therefore, becawse I would not breake my day, and have accordingly payd it as Mr. Lawe† his man well knoweth, ffor w^ch^ I wholy relyed upon you, psumyng partly upon your owne promyse, as comyng from your owne kynde proffer thereof, and partly upon that former and accustomed kyndnes and good parts of ffriendship w^ch^, for her ‡ sake that is nowe gone, you seemed to have borne to me; which late kyndnes of yours, though it be not (as I hope) quite extinguished, yet in apparency is not so great as it hathe bene, in that you fayled me when I least feared it; but, knowing no just cause of this your so hard and unkynde dealing, I doe eftsoones desyre you that, if nowe you will not send me the money presently, yet that I may be sure thereof at any tyme between this and Bartholomewe-tyde. And because you shall not thinke that I will be any way more beholden unto you, if need be, then you shall lyke of, I have here sent you a gage, desiring you to accept thereof, as being of sufficient value to lend so much money, and that a greater some upon. And howsoever you plead poverty, I pray God you may never have more need or cause to complayne in any other case then, I am sure, you have in this. And ffurther, that you may knowe I urge you to no more than, owt of your owne kyndnes, you proffered of yourself, I have cawsed my late servant Mr. Auditor Ffuller, by wrighting, to signify what he remembreth of your former proffered kyndnes to me. Thus trusting to receve your absolute answere by this so trusty a messenger, (whom, if it were a thousand tymes so muche, I would credytt withal), with my very kynde cõmendacõns, I betake you to the safe tuition of the Almighty. London, this 27^th^ July 1602.

"Your friend, ready to please you in a farre greater matter than this,

"M. Cumberlande."

---

* Malcolm's Lond. Rediviv.

† Mr. Sutton's confidential agent in business matters. He was nominated by the Founder among the first Governors of Charterhouse. He died in 1614 and was buried in Charterhouse Chapel.

‡ This refers to Mrs. Sutton, who died 17th June 1602.

"Right Wll (*i.e.* Worshipful),

"I am a musitian who formerly have brought upp noblemens daughters, as well knights as gentlemens daughters, in the arte of musicke; who, through a long continuance of sycknes (my schollers, wch were my only staye and sole mayntenance, beinge long sithence departed into the countrye and not yet returned), am, for wante of schollars, brought into such pinchinge penurye, as that I am not able to protect myselfe, much losse my wyfe and children. And hearing the generouse reporte of yor wrps (worship's) worthinesse, and worthy disposition towardes distressed gentlemen, to schollers, and men of arte, chose rather to set my sorrowes to sale to so wll (worshipful) a gent. as yorself, being endued with wisdome, mercye, and charitable commisseration, then to breake foorth my miseries to any inferior pson (person). Thus cravinge your wrps patience for this my bold attempt, not wthout blushinge cheekes, I cease.

"By nowe the unworthy chief gent. now lyving of the name,*

"John Hardinge, 1611."

From Mrs. Anne Lawrence *(undated).*

"Before I know you, reporte gave me mutch assurance of your Cristian disposition, which emboulden me to be a suter unto you for the lendinge me two hundred pounds, quaentinge you with my occationes to use the same, whearein, at my firest and seconde conferences, I founde you so favorable, as I trusted greatly one your frendship thearin; yet afterwardes, when I hoped most thearoff, you weare fardest from doinge me that good I desired; wich, if you had done, though I coulde not give sitch security wich wordly wise men so muche stande upon, yet, by God's healpe, I woulde with all possible speade." .... "And, because I now conceafve you ar to worldly affected, or else to mutch draune or carried by the perswationes of som from doing that good whilest you are livinge, wich in the ende will be best for yourselfe, I have, chiefelye for your goode, and partlye for my one, wrote this, wich I pray you reade and consider well of, for it is truthe withoute disimulation, and sitch as, if the eyes of your soull be not starke blinde, the eares of your hearte quite deafe and your conscience

* This and the following letters are in the Charterhouse Evidence-Room.

sealed up to sinne, you shall finde to be better treasure, by me, a poore gentlewoman and a maide, willingly gathered to bestowe on you, then sitch as I desired to borrow of you, or all the like this worlde affourdes."

She then proceeds with a collection of the most impudent applications of scripture texts, and seeks to edify him with the following tales:—

"'Theare was a man had three frinds; too of them he loved entirely, the other he made little account of. This man was sent for before the Kinge and desired his first frind to goo with him, but he wolde not, yet he brought him parte of his way; then he desired his seconde frinde to goo with him, and he could not, yet he gave him something for a remembrance; last of all, he went to his thirde frend, of whom he made recognizance, and he went with him to the Kinge, and awnswared for him in all matteres whatsoever.' So, man in this worlde, beinge sent for by deathe, comes to his wife, children, or frinds, to goo with him, but they will not; yet they will bring him to the grave; then he desires his goodes and substaunce to go with him, and they cannot, yet they will give him a sheate; but his conscience will go with him, and before the throne of God awnsware for him. Therefore have greate care to be of a good conscience, and whilest you are here, provide as a King did of whome I shall tell you. 'Theare was a country wheare the commoners did choose theare King; and at ther pleasure woulde banishe him into a far country, almost naked; but one Kinge, more wise than the rest, so soone as he was chosen, sent continuall provision into that country where he shoulde go, that, when his peopell did banishe him, he mought be royally receaved, and live most princely theare.' Even so you may nowe provide in this worlde, that when deathe comes for you, God, his angelles, and saintes, may joyfully receave you into heaven, wherfore, withoute furder delay, tender your ones soulls good; live godly, and remember that deathe will steale upon you as a thiefe; also that the late Lorde Treasorer,* who no doubte hoped to live as long as you, was sodenly sent for. I neide not

* William Cecil, Lord Burleigh.

tell you that Sir John Spencer * is ded; who, if before he died had geven but the twentye part of his worldly wealthe to the poore and nedy members of Crist, had don a heavenly deed upon earth, for which his soulle now undoubtedly would have had a heaven reward."

"Good Sir,

"I pray lett it not trouble you to consyder of these fewe lynes, somwhat concerninge you and somwhat myself. I dwelled somtyme neere to a man of good creditt, wealth, and experiance in the worlde, whoe was thought somwhat hard and penuriouse in denyinge to hymself the pleasure of his own aboundance and superfluityes; but otherwayes very charitable to his poor neighboures and frends, in lending them at theyre neede, in doinge other good workes of mercy in his lyef time, and juste in all his factes and promises. The countrye wheare he lyved remembreth thus of hym. At on tyme a distressed neighbour of hys came to hym to borrowe a small some of money towardes payment of his rente, (butt at som unseasonable hower, as it seems), to whom his answeare was, that he would lend hym none. 'Sir, (quoth the poore fellowe,) that is the woorst you can doe me.' 'Nay, neighbour,' sayd he, 'I could doe much woorse by thee; for I could bear thee in hande to lend thee money, and never mean it.' Nowe in good fayth, methinks this was a playn answeare, and suerly he was held to be a good honest playn dealinge man; and yet, alas! in the end he proved mortale (which was lamented of many), and so dyed. Sir, I crave no more; but whereas havinge lately done you som smalle curtesye, (whiche I was not bounde to), and thearuppon I desyred you to lend me a very small some of money, which hitherto, in a month's space, you have not refused, but often promysed to send to me, which I have as often expected, even as the Jewes doe for theyr Messias. I say, I crave no more but that I may certaynly knowe your pleasure when and what you will send to me, least you proove mortal as other men, and soe dye before you sende; for, it beinge true that younge dye soone, it is also impossible for ould men to live longe.

"William Wynne.

"29th Octobre 1611."

* Sir. J. Spencer, Kt., was Lord Mayor of London. He amassed a very large fortune and was known as "Rich Spencer." William, second Lord Compton, afterwards Earl of Northampton, married his only daughter and heiress.

One applicant asks assistance on the occasion of his marriage: another wishes to save her dead brother's body from arrest by paying his debts: another would shed all his blood in return for the expected kindness: and one, who has been shipwrecked, asks aid between two scraps of Latin.* There is no record of the replies made to these letters, but no doubt Mr. Sutton was fully capable of forming a just estimate of the lofty claims of Lady Cumberland, the cringing servility of Mr. Hardinge and the minatory piety of Mrs. Lawrence. The cares of a busy life were beginning to be wearisome, and Mr. Sutton also entertained serious thoughts about the best manner of bestowing the large fortune he possessed. Accordingly on the 27th May 1594 he resigned the office of Master-General of the Ordnance of the North, and on the 20th June following he conveyed to the Lord Chief Justice (Sir John Popham), the Master of the Rolls and others, with power of revocation, all his estates in Essex to found a Hospital at Hallingbury, otherwise called Hallingbury Bouchers, in that county. On the 17th December of the same year he made a will in which Mrs. Sutton was amply provided for, and after the fashion of the times he bequeathed to the Queen £2000, as "a proof of his trewe and faithful heart borne to his dread Sovereign Queen Elizabeth, in recompense of his oversight, careless dealinge and forgetfulness in her service, most humbly beseeching her to stand a good and gracious lady to his poor wife." The will also provides £3000 for the building of the Hospital and Free School: it

* Malcolm's Londinium Redivivum.

gives twenty scholarships to Peterhouse and twenty to Jesus College, Cambridge, and the residue in various legacies. But he was not only willing to dispose of his money in bequests: there is evidence that he made a charitable use of his substance during his life. Many such acts of benevolence are unmentioned in the records still left; but a good example of them may be seen in the liberality with which he met the necessities of his tenantry in 1595, when there was a great scarcity of corn throughout the kingdom. Letters are still in existence in which he gave orders that the poor on his estate should be supplied with corn at a price far below the market cost, and this liberality was continued for thirty weeks until plenty returned. He continued his business as a banker, and in 1597 lent £100 to Queen Elizabeth: Robert, Earl of Sussex, is also found among his debtors: the loan to him was £50. On July 17th 1602 Mrs. Sutton died. She was a lady of great intelligence, of business-like habits, and a very charitable disposition. The following letter, one of many written by her to her husband and still preserved, is very short, but it furnishes evidence of the lady's character and gives an interesting illustration of the housekeeping of the time in which it was written:—

"Good Mr. Sutton,

"I send you here inclosed a letter from John Hutton, which came by the carrier, and all is well at Balsham, I thank God; and here is another letter, which I opened before I looked at the superscription, which came by another; it toucheth a widow, wherefore I need not write to you in her behalf, for I know you have great care of the poor for God's cause, though she were a

mere stranger. I send here a note for Lenten Stores, if you intend to stay here this Lent, you must increase it for Haberdeen and Lynge; as so praying God to bless us both, I commit you to his keeping.

"Your loving obedient Wife,

"Elis. Sutton.

"Newington, 27th of Jan. 1600."

"Twenty Great Eeles.
"Four Salmons Good, and Great.
"A Barrel of Lowborne Herrings of the bigger boyle.
"Forty Stock Fish, Good, and ready beaten.
"A Cade of Sprats, and a Cade of red Herrings, them that be Good.
"Six Pounds of Figgs, and three Pounds of Jordan Almonds."

The following extract also supplies an illustration of her character:—

"There is in all of the wheate dressed XV quters 3 bushells since you went, and now they be about your best wheate, Good Mr. Sutton, I beseech you remember the firste for the poore folkes and God will reward you."

The loss of this estimable lady threw a gloom over the life of Sutton; he lived in retirement for some years, and there is little notice of his life between 1602 and 1607. At this later date he became involved in a very troublesome discussion, in which some attempt was made to detract from the high character he had always borne for fair and conscientious dealing. The story may be briefly told as follows: Sir John Harrington had lent a sum of £3000 to Sir John Skinner, who owned the manor of Castle Camps in Cambridgeshire: Sir John Skinner's estate was much embarrassed and Sir John Harrington

was anxious to recover his debt. He persuaded Sutton to buy the estate of Castle Camps, that the payment of the sum due might be secured. The price of Castle Camps manor was £10,800. The transfer was completed and Sutton received an acknowledgment for the whole of the purchase-money. He paid Sir J. Harrington £3000 and one William Smith £3100. But there were other claims on the estate and Sutton was naturally unwilling to pay the balance to Sir John Skinner till he knew to what extent the manor was mortgaged. Immediately after the sale of Castle Camps Skinner was imprisoned for debt. He sent a petition to Lord Ellesmere, then Lord Chancellor, setting forth that his condition was due to Sutton's refusal to pay the balance due to him: Lord Ellesmere wrote a severe letter to Sutton, calling on him to do justice to Sir John Skinner. The reply to Lord Ellesmere, which is here given, contains a sufficient defence against the charge of fraud which was most unjustly brought against the writer.

"To the RIGHT HON. THE LORD ELLESMER,
Lord Chancellor of England.

"RIGHT HON'BLE,

"Understanding that yo^r Lo^p (Lordship) had referred the matter in question, touchinge the extent uppon the manno^r of Camps, extended by Willbraham's recognizance to the use of M^r Wynne, and expectinge daylye some goode order therin, for the freinge of the said extent, I have forborne as yet to deliver all the money out of my hands to Sir John Skinner; and hopinge that some good course may yet be verie shortly taken herein by those D^rs whom y^r Lo^p hath assigned to examine that busines, that beinge the greatest p'sent matter of trouble and incumbrance to me and to the land. And that beinge discharged, as I wish, and some reasonable and indifferent course taken with Sir John, for the quallifying of the rest of the momentarye business, and

wherewth his land is chargeable, I will most willingly pay unto him all the money yet behinde. And lookynge daylye for some speedye end herin to be p'cured by Sir John Skinner, I am p'fectly at yor Lop com'andment, I have stayed at London untill I was in great danger of the plague, and hasarded my health, wh I know not when I shall recover, for the want wherof is the lett that I cannot attend yr Lop at this p'esent, as my dutye is. I most humbly beseech yor good Lop on my knees, that you would vouchsafe to spare my farther answer at this tyme, and not to p'cure the King's Matie to be my heavy lord upon this occasion. And so I wish unto yos all honnor and happyness. This third of September 1607.

"Yor Lps pore humble sycke Servant,

"Thomas Sutton." *

It will be seen from this letter that Sutton was at the time suffering from illness; but during the time of his retreat he had been actively employed on maturing the plan of his foundation. It is suspected, not without some reason, that Sir John Harrington, who professed himself anxious to promote the scheme which Sutton had made, as above mentioned, in 1594, was really opposed to its execution. He stated that he was busily employed in obtaining the King's Licence of Mortmain, that Sutton might be able to bequeath his lands according to his wish: but he had other designs in view. These designs are referred to in the following letter:—

"Mr. Sutton,

"There is an old verse, 'ter pulsare licet, si non operitur, abito.' I have formerly written two long l'res (letters) unto you (yet I wish you should not think them too long): in them I rec'mended two most co'mendable matters unto you, devotion and

* A copy of this letter, in Mr. Sutton's handwriting, is in Charterhouse Evidence-Room.

honor, w^th^ have been sometyme lawfully maryed together, though now some mayntayn an opinion that they are devorced.

"I have yet receaved no dyrect awnswer of them, but only a summons to come speedyly up; which I obayd before I receavd y^r^. I know both in y^r^ kyndnes and good maners you will thinke fit to awnswer so many lynes, so frendly written to you under my hand, w^th^ a few under yours. I need not amplyfy unto you or repeat the worthynes of the thinges I perswade; only I protest to you, on my salvation, the wysest men I have spoken w^th^, the godliest and learnedest dyvynes I do meet with, approve my motion in bothe, and will, eyther by conference or wryting, confyrm as moche to you. I only wysh you not to undervalew y^rselfe; pluck up y^r^ speryts; linger not in good purposes; rejecte not friendly advyses; hilarem datorem diligit Deus; God loveth a cheerful giver; and God's deputyes on earth participat of that among other dyvyne qualytyes, namely, in bountifull geving favors, and in gratefull accepting good actions, and sometymes good intentions. And so wyshing (as to myselfe) good success in your good desyres, I co'mit you to God.

"Your assured trewe Frend,

"JOHN HARYNGTON.

"From my lodging, this foul Friday morning,
6^th^ November 1607."

Whatever may have been the suggestions made by Sir John Harrington, his ultimate proposal, which probably was entertained by him from the first, was that Sutton should leave his large fortune to the King's second son, Charles, Duke of York (afterwards Charles I.), and that in acknowledgment of this liberality he should receive the title of baron from the King. This proposal was promptly rejected by Sutton: but Sir John was not so easily foiled. He caused it to be made known to the King that Sutton had formed the intention of disposing of his fortune in favour of the Duke of York, and suggested to his Majesty that it would be prudent to

create him a baron, in order to confirm the intention. The report soon reached Sutton's ear, and he forthwith wrote to the Lord Chancellor and the Earl of Salisbury the following letter, a noble specimen of manly decision:—

"May it please your Lordships,

"I understand that his Majesty is possessed by Sir John Harrington, or by some other by his means, that I intend to make his Highness's son, the Duke of Yorke, my heire; whereupon, as it is reported, his Highness proposeth to bestowe the honour of a baron on me, whereof as I am most unworthy, so I vowe to God, and your Lordships, I never harboured the least thought, or proude desire of any such matter. My mynde in my younger times hath been ever free from ambition, and, now I am going to my grave, to gape for such a thing were mere dotage in me, so unworthie allso, as I confess unto your Lordships; that this knight hath been often tampering with me to that purpose, to enterteyne honour, and to make the noble duke my heire is true, to whom I made that answer, as had we either witte, or honestie, (with reverence to your Lordships be it spoken) he never would have engaged himself in this business so egregiously to delude his Majesty, and wrong me. My humble suite unto your Lordships is, that, considering this occasion hath brought me into question, and in hazard of his Highness's displeasure, having never given Sir John Harrington, nor any man lyvinge, either promise, or semblance to do any such act, but upon his motions grew into utter dislike with him for such idle speeche, your Lordships will vouchsafe me this favour to informe his Highness aright, howe things have proceeded directly without my privitie; and withall, that my trust is in his gracious disposition, not to conceit the worste of me for other mens follies; but that I may have free liberty with his princely leave, wherein I rest most assured, to dispose of myne owne, as other his Majesties loyal subjects. And so most humbly recommending my dutie, and service to your Lordships, for the increase of whose honours, and happiness I shall ever pray.

"I rest

"Your Lordships

"poor Beadsman

"THOMAS SUTTON."

The history of this contemptible intrigue is completed by Sir John Harrington's answer to a verbal expostulation on his conduct:—

"Sir,

"Your strange message first by my man, after by my son, now seconded by your speach to myself, did greatlie trouble me. That I have undone you, overthrown your estate, disturbed your designes, that no man dare buy any land of you, be your feoffee, nor take any trust from you, so as that, which you had ordained to good uses, and to redeem your sins, was now so incombered, as you were skant master of your own, and all by means of a bruit among your friendes, raised as you suppose by me, that you have made Duke Charles your heir, and the King your executor.

"Far be it from me to abuse, or misreport either so princelie, and pious an intention, as I know his Majestie hath to further all good works, or so godlie a purpose, as you pretend to do some, but God cannot be mocked, tho' we may dissemble with men.

"The letter is still extant, which was my warrant, I have spoken noth ng but within compass of that, and that very sparinglie to your private friends. In which letter seeing you yourself would needs in your sense read a caveat to refuse honor, because of age, which, in my construction, was an incouragement to take the honor due to your abilities, and years; I have been since, and will be silent about it. For the suite you would make to his Majesty, which I will not so much as guess at, I will say what I thinke, you will make noe suite, but such, as will finde favour and expedition, and seeing you suppose I wronged you before, I would be glad to make you amends now by any endevor of mine. Onlie my old suite you may not forget to be a benefactor to Bath church in your life time; for alms in ones life is like a light borne before one, whereas alms after death is like a candle carried behind one. Do somewhat for this church, you promist to have seen it e're this; whensoever you will go to bathe, my lodgings shall be at your commandement, the baths would strengthen your sinews, the alms would comfort your soule.

"The tower, the quyre, and two isles are already finisht by Mr. Billet, executor to the worthie Lord Treasorer Burleigh. The walls are up ready for covering.

"The leade is promised by our bountifull bishop Dr. Montague.

Timber is promised by the Earl of Shrewsburie, the Earle of Hartford, the Lord Say, Mr. Robert Hopton, and others.

"There lacks but monie for workmanship, which if you would give, you should have many good prayers in the church now in your life time, when they may indeed doe you good, and when the time is to make friends of the mammon of iniquity as Christ bids us, that we may be received into everlasting tabernacles, to which God send us, to whose protection I leave you, &c.

"From Greenwich this
13th of June 1608.

"JOHN HARRINGTON."

Sutton was willing to pardon the duplicity which had been practised on him; for Sir John Harrington was shortly afterwards again in correspondence with his friend, and once more busy with proposals for the employment of Sutton's money. He writes thus:—

"MR. SUTTON,

"I long to heer how you doe, and long more to see you heer, whear I keep my lodging for you, according to my promise, and wyll whyle there is any hope of yr cominge. I sent you word I had not forgotten the charge you gave mee; now I say to you, the mocyon yo made to the King alredy (I mean for ye mortmayn) and he hath promist yt; and furder being told that p'haps my Lo. Tresorer wold bee agaynst yt, his Matie made awnswer, that yf yt concerned the crown land, or land in his possession, or of his ffee, yt might bee he wold shew reason agaynst yt, but in this to so godly an extent he shold not crosse yt. Let me heer of you, and think not that I love you as those that wold gayn by you, but I wold gayn you and myselfe to God. I have, for all my losses, more left then I am worthy of, and thousands more worthy want yt, and as the yeer fraues * are lyke to want. You rich men should open yr barnes; geve, lend, distribute to the poore, and lay up therefore in

* German ladies. This passage has reference to the marriage portion of the Princess Elizabeth, who was to be married to the Elector of Hanover.

heaven; ffayth ys good, hope is good, but charity is the cheefer, 'major horum caritas.' Here are lawyers at Bathe; Justice Willimes, an honest and stout judge; heer ys Sir Henry Montacu, Recorder; Mr. Francis Moore. Heer be devynes, heer be physicians, and heer is Saynt Billet, the benefactor of this church, and founder of the new hospitall for lame pilgrims. Heer ys the young Lord Norrys, whom sycknes hath nearly made olde. And heer be lame old men, whome Bath hath almost made younge. Believe me, I think yt wold do you much good, and because I wysh you much, I wish you heer. I can let you have honest roome, and cost mee never a peny. So fare ye well.

"Your trew ffrend,
"JOHN HARYNGTON."

"MR. SUTTON,

"I was booted and spurd to have gone out of London on Satirday, but, understanding yr interrogatoryes wear not then in. I tooke occasyon to put off my going down till this day, wh being the latest I could possibly stay, I hope you will have mee excused, and the rather because, indeed, I can say just nothing of the matter, wh I think is the cawse my Lady Skinner forbeareth to serve process on me, thowh she said she wold. I heer now, that my Lady Arbella ys fallen sicke of the small pox, and that my Lady Skinner attendeth her, and taketh great payns about her. Yf you think yt import you so moche as it bee worth my coming up, I will stay till the Parlament begin, wh I heer will hold the 18th of ffebruary, or thereabout; agaynst wh time make ready yor bill for the mortmayne, and I can answer you yt shall passe, yf you will bee as good as your word, and so I ame bidden to tell you. In the meantyme I will provyde yor lodging at Bath, warm and clenly, good dry wood for yor fyre; the town hath ever good beefe and good bredde; and when you see the place, and fynde (as I wish), that God geve you helth, that then let God work wth you for the good of the church and poore thear; by whose prayr yor lyfe and helth may be continewd yet seven yeer at least, so you wold be cherfull and not vex yorself wth the paltry dealing of such as Sir John Skinner; and so I will end wth this distich that my father taught me above forty since,

'In doing good use no delay,
For tyme is swift, and slydes away.'

"Yr trew loving Frend,
"JOHN HARYNGTON."

But Sutton's advisers were not all after the same type. The following letter of Mr. Joseph Hall, Vicar of Waltham, afterwards Bishop of Norwich, furnishes a striking contrast to the meddlesome selfishness of Sir John Harrington:—

"Sir,

"I trouble you not with reasons of my writing nor with excuses: if I do ill, no plea can warrant me, if well, I cannot be discouraged with any censures. I crave not your pardon but your acceptation: it is no presumption to give good counsel, and presents of love fear not to be taken ill of strangers: my pen and your substance are both given us for one end, to do good: these are our talents, how happy are we if we can improve them well! Suffer me to do you good with the one, that with the other you may do good to many, and most to your self: you cannot but know, that your full hand and worthy purposes have possessed the world with much expectation: what speak I of the world! whose honest and reasonable claims yet cannot be contemned with honour, nor disappointed without dishonour. The God of Heaven who hath lent you this abundance, and given you these gracious thoughts of charity, of piety, looks long for the issue of both, and will easily complain of too little, or too late: your wealth, and your will are both good; but the first is only made good by the second; for if your hand were full, and your heart empty, we, who now applaud you, should justly pity you: you might have riches, not goods, not blessings; your burden should be greater than your estate, and you should be richer in sorrow than in metals. For (if we look to no other world) what gain is it to be keeper of the best earth? that which is the common coffer of all the rich mines, we do but tread upon; and account it vile, because it doth but hold and hide those treasures: whereas the skilfullest metallist, that findeth and refineth those precious veins for publick use, is rewarded, is honoured: the very basest element yields gold. The savage Indian gets it, the servile apprentice works it, the very Midianitish camel may wear it; the miserable worldling admires it, the covetous Jew swallows it, the unthrifty ruffian spends it, what are all these the better for it? only good use gives praise to earthly possessions: herein therefore you owe more to God, that he hath given you an heart to do

good: a will to be as rich in good works, as great in riches; to be a friend to this mammon is to be an enemy to God; but to make friends with it is royal and christian: his enemies may be wealthy, none but his friends can either be good, or do good: 'Da et accipe,' saith the wise man.

"The christian, who must imitate the high pattern of his Creator, knows his best riches to be bounty. God, who hath all, gives all; reserves nothing: and for himself he well considers, that God hath not made him an owner, but a servant; and a servant of servants not of his goods, but of the giver: not a treasurer, but a steward, whose praise is more to have laid out well, than to have received much: the greatest gain therefore that he affects, is an even reckoning, a clear discharge: which since it is obtained by disposing, not by keeping, he counts reservation loss, and just expence his trade, and joy. He knows, that 'well done faithful servant' is a thousand times more sweet a note, than soul take thine ease: for that is the voice of the master recompencing; this of the servant presuming: and what follows to the one, but his master's joy? and what to the other, but the loss of his soul? Blessed be that God, who hath given you an heart to forethink this, and in this dry and dead age a will to honour him with his own; and to credit his gospel with your beneficence. Lo! we are upbraided with barrenness: your name hath been publickly opposed to these challenges; as in whom it shall be seen, that the truth hath friends that can give: I neither distrust nor persuade you, whose resolutions are happily fixed on purposes of good; only give me leave to hasten your pace a little, and to excite your christian forwardness to begin speedily, what you have long, and constantly vowed. You would not but do good, why not now? I speak boldly, the more speed, the more comfort: neither are the times in our disposal, nor our selves.

"If God had set us a day, and made our wealth inseparable, there were no danger in delaying: now our uncertainty either must quicken us, or may deceive us. How many have meant well, and done nothing, and lost the crown with lingring? whose destinies have prevented their desires; and have made their good motions the wards of their executors; not without miserable success: to whom, that they would have done good, is not so great a praise, as it is dishonour, that they might have done it: their wrecks are our warnings: we are equally mortal, equally fickle. Why have you this respite of living, but to prevent the imperious necessity of death? It is a woful and remediless

complaint, the end of our days hath over-run the beginning of our good works: early beneficence hath no danger; many joys: for the conscience of good done, the prayers and blessings of the relieved, and the gratulations of saints, are as so many perpetual comforters, which can make our life pleasant, and our death happy; our evil days good, our good better: all these are but lost with delay; few and cold are the prayers for him that may give: and in lieu, our good purposes foreslowed are become our tormentors: upon our death-bed little difference is betwixt good deferred, and evil done: good was meant, who hindred it? will our conscience say: there was time enough, means enough, need enough, what hindred? did fear of envy, distrust of want? alas! what buggs are these to fright men from heaven? as if the envy of keeping were less than bestowing: as if God were not as good a debtor, as a giver. 'He that gives to the poor, lends to the Lord,' says Solomon. If he freely give us, what we may lend, and grace to give, will he not much more pay us what we have lent? and give us, because we have given? that is his bounty, this is his justice: O happy is the man that may be a creditor to his Master! Heaven and earth shall empty, before he want a royal payment: if we dare not trust God while we live, how dare we trust men when we are dead? Men, that are still deceitful and light upon the ballance: light of truth, and heavy of self-love; how many executors have proved the executioners of honest wills? how many have our eyes seen, that after most careful choice of trusty guardians, have had their children, and goods so disposed, as if the parents soul could return to see it, I doubt whether it would be happy: how rare is that man, who prefers not himself to his dead friend, profit to truth? who will take no advantage of the impossibility of the account? Whatever therefore men either shew, or promise, happy is that man, that may be his own auditor, supervisor, executor: as you love God and yourself, be not afraid of being happy too soon.

"I am not worthy to give so bold advice, let the wise man of Syrach speak for me; 'Do good before thou die, and according to thine ability stretch out thine hand, and give: defraud not thy self of thy good day; and let not the portion of thy good desires pass over thee: shalt thou not leave thy travels to another, and thy labours to them, that will divide thy heritage?' Or let a wiser than he speak, viz. Solomon: 'Say not, to-morrow I will give, if thou now have it: for thou knowest not what a day will bring forth.' It hath been an old rule of liberality, he gives twice, who

gives quickly: whereas slow benefits argue unchearfulness, and lose their worth: who lingers his receipts, is condemned as unthrifty: he who knoweth both saith, 'It is better to give than to receive.' If we are of the same spirit, why are we hasty in the worst, and slack in the better? Suffer you yourself, good sir, for God's sake, for the gospel's sake, for the church's sake, for your soul's sake, to be stirred up by these poor lines to a resolute and speedy performing of your worthy intentions. And take this as a loving invitation sent from heaven by an unworthy messenger: you cannot deliberate long of fit objects for your beneficence, except it be more for multitude than want: the streets, yea, the world is full. How doth Lazarus lie at every door? How many sons of the prophets in their mcanly provided colledges may say, not 'mors in olla,' but 'fames'? how many churches may justly plead that which our Saviour had his disciples, 'the Lord hath need'? and if this infinite store hath made your choice doubtful, how easie were it to shew you, wherein you might oblige the whole church of God to you? and make your memorial both eternal and blessed; or if you had rather, the whole commonwealth?

"But now I find my self too bold and too busy, in thus looking to particularities: God shall direct you, and if you follow him, shall crown you. Howsoever, if good be done, and that betimes, he hath what he desired, and your soul shall have more than you can desire. The success of my weak yet hearty councel shall make me as rich, as God hath made you with all your abundance.

"God bless it to you, and make both our reckonings chearful in the day of our common audit."

The letters above quoted are cited only with the view of giving a general illustration of Mr. Sutton's position. It was not therefore necessary to observe the chronological order in which they were written. They will shew that the possessor of such a fortune as Mr. Sutton amassed was not in want of advice about the best manner of using it. After careful thought and earnest deliberation he determined on the foundation of a hospital, not with the vain intention of securing a posthumous

reputation, but because he earnestly believed that by so doing he could best discharge the stewardship which God had entrusted to him. His mind is revealed to us by the following passage: "This I can confidently report from the mouth of a credible witness, who heard it himself and told it to me, that Mr. Sutton used often to repair into a private garden, where he poured forth his prayers to God, and amongst other passages was frequently overheard to use this expression, 'Lord, Thou hast given me a large and liberal estate: give me also a heart to make use thereof;' which last was granted to him accordingly." * In this spirit he set himself to the great work of bestowing his fortune, and at length in 1609 he obtained the permission of the legislature to devote it to the erection and establishment of a hospital at Hallingbury Bouchers (generally known as Little Hallingbury), in Essex, close on the borders of Hertfordshire, from which it is divided by the Lesser Stour. The Act by which this permission was given fills so important a place in the history of Charterhouse, that it is here quoted at length:—

"*An Act to confirme and enable the Erection and Establishment of an Hospitall, a free Grammar-Schoole, and sundrie other godly and charitable Acts and Uses, done, and intended to be done and performed by* Thomas Sutton, *Esquire.*

"HUMBLY beseecheth your Majestie your loyall and dutifull subject Thomas Sutton of Balsham in the countie of Cambridge Esquire, that it may please your most excellent Majestie, and the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and the Commons in this present

* Fuller's Church History of Britain, § iv. 20, 21.

Parliament assembled, to enact, ordaine, and establish: And be it enacted, ordained, and established by the authoritie aforesaid, that in the town of Hallingburie, otherwise called Hallinburie Bouchers in the countie of Essex, there may be builded and erected (at the costs and charges of your suppliant) one meet, fit, and convenient house, buildings, and rooms, for the abiding and dwelling of such number of poor people, men and children, as your suppliant shall name, limit, and appoint to be lodged, harboured, abide, and be relieved there: And for the abiding, dwelling, and necessary use of one schoolmaster and usher to instruct the said children in reading, writing, and the Latin and Greek grammar; and of one divine and godly preacher to instruct and teach all the rest of the same house in the knowledge of God and his Word; and of one master to govern all these persons of, in, or belonging unto the same house, and that the same shall and may be called and named the Hospital of King James, founded in Hallingburie in the county of Essex, at the humble petition, and at the only costs and charges of Thomas Sutton, Esquire: and that the Right Rev. Father in God, Richard, now Archbishop of Canterbury, and his successors archbishops there, Thomas, Lord Ellesmere, Lord Chancellor of England, and such as after him shall succeed to be Lord Chancellors or Lord Keepers of the Great Seal of England for and during the time they shall so continue or be in the same office, Robert, Earl of Salisbury, Lord High Treasurer of England, and such as after him shall succeed to be Treasurers of England, for and during the time they shall continue or be in the same office, the Reverend Father in God, Launcelot, Bishop of Ely, and his successors bishops there, Richard, Bishop of Rochester and Deane of the Cathedrall Church of Westminster, and his successours of and in the same deanrie of Westminster, Sir Thomas Foster, Kt., one of the justices of your Majesties Court of Common Pleas usually holden at Westminster, Sir Henry Hobart, Knight, your Majesties Atturney Generall, John Overall, Doctor of Divinity, Deane of the Cathedral Church of St. Paul in London, and his successors deans there, Henry Thursby, Esquire, one of the maisters of your Majesties Court of Chancerie, Thomas Fortescue, Thomas Paget, Geffery Nightingale, and Richard Sutton, Esquires, John Lawe and Thomas Browne, gentlemen, and such others as shall be from time to time for ever hereafter chosen and nominated in and to the places and steads of such of them as shall decease by your suppliant during his life, and after his decease by the most part of them which then shall be governours of the said hospitall,

to be and succeed in and to the place and places of him and them deceasing, shall and may be the governours of the said hospitall and of the members, goods, lands, revenues and hereditaments of the same at all times hereafter for ever. And that the same governours and hospitall shall for ever hereafter stand and be incorporated, established, and founded in name and in deed a body politike and corporate, to have continuance for ever, by the name of the Governours of the Hospitall of King James, founded in Hallingbury, in the county of Essex, at the humble petition, and at the only costs and charges of Thomas Sutton, Esquire, and that they the said governours may have a perpetual succession, and that by that name they and their successors may for ever hereafter have, hold, and enjoy the manors, lordships, messuages, lands, tenements, and hereditaments hereafter mentioned, without any licence or pardon for any alienation of them or any of them, and without any licence of or for mortmaine, or any other law or statute to the contrarie notwithstanding: that is to say, your suppliant's manors and lordships of Southminster, Norton, Little Hallingbury alias Hallingbury Bouchers, and Much Stambridge, in the county of Essex, with all their and every of their rights, members, and appurtenances whatsoever; and also all those your suppliant's manors and lordships of Buslingthorpe and Dunnesbye in the county of Lincoln, with their and either of their rights, members and appurtenances whatsoever; and also all those your suppliant's manors of Salthope alias Saltrop, Chilton and Blackgrove, with their and every of their rights, members and appurtenances in the said county of Wiltes; and also all those your suppliant's lands and pasture grounds called Blackegrove, contayning by estimation two hundred acres of pasture, with the appurtenances in Blackegrove and Wroughton, in the said countie of Wiltes; and also all that your suppliant's manor of Mihenden, otherwise called the manor of Migunden, in the parishes of Wroughton, Lygerd and Tregoce, in the said county of Wiltes; and all that your suppliant's manor of Elcombe, and the parke called Elcombe Parke, in the said countie of Wiltes; and all that your suppliant's manor of Wattlescote, otherwise called Wigglescote, otherwise called Wiglescete, otherwise called Wikelsete, in the said countie of Wiltes; and all that your suppliant's manor of Wescote otherwise called Wescete, with the appurtenances, in the said countie of Wiltes; and also all those your suppliant's lands and pastures, containing by estimation one hundred acres of land, and threescore

acres of pasture in Wigglescote and Wroughton, in the said countie of Wiltes; and also all that your suppliant's manor of Uffcote, with the appurtenances, in the said countie of Wiltes; and all those your suppliant's two messuages and one thousand acres of land, two thousand acres of pasture, three hundred acres of meadow, and three hundred acres of wood, with the appurtenances, in Brodehinton, in the said countie of Wiltes; and also all those your suppliant's manors and lordships of Campes, otherwise called Compes, otherwise called Campes Castle, otherwise called Castle Campes, scituate, lying, being, and extending, in the counties of Cambridge and Essex, or in either of them, or elsewhere within the realm of England; and also all that your suppliant's manor of Balsham, in the county of Cambridge, with all and singular the rights, members and appurtenances thereof whatsoever; and also all that your suppliant's messuage and lands scituate and being in the parishes of Hackney and Tottenham, in the county of Middlesex, or in either of them, with their and either of their rights, members and appurtenances whatsoever, which said messuage was lately purchased of Sir William Bowyer, Knight, and the lands in Tottenham now or late in the tenure or occupation of William Benning, yeoman; and also all and singular the manors, lordships, messuages, lands, tenements, reversions, services, meadowes, pastures, woods, advowsons, patronages of churches, and hereditaments of your suppliant whatsoever, scituate lying or being within the said counties of Essex, Lincolne, Wiltes, Cambridge and Middlesex, or any of them, with all and every their rights, members and appurtenances whatsoever; and also, all your suppliant's letters patents, indentures, deeds, evidences, bonds and writings, concerning the premises, or any of them. And all such conditions, warranties, vouchers, actions, suites, entries, benefits, and demaunds, as shall or may be had by any person or persons upon or by reason of them or any of them; except those your suppliant's manors or lordships of Littlebury and Hadstocke, in the said county of Essex: and except all your suppliant's lands, tenements and hereditaments, in Littlebury and Hadstocke aforesaid, or in either of them. And that the saide governours and their successors, by the same name, shall and may have power, abilitie and capacitie, to demise, lease, and grant their possessions and hereditaments, and every of them, and to take, acquire, and purchase, and to sue and be sued, and to do, performe, and execute all and everie other lawfull act and thing, good, necessarie, and profitable for the said

incorporation, in as full and ample manner and forme, to all intents, constructions, and purposes, as any other incorporations, or body politique or corporat, fully and perfectly founded and incorporated, may do. And that the same governours and their successors for the time being, may have and use a common seale for the making, graunting, and demising of such their demises and leases, and for the doing of all and every other thing, touching or in any wise concerning the said incorporation; in which seale shall be engraven the armes of the said Thomas Sutton your suppliant: and also that it may bee further enacted by the authoritie aforesaid, and be it enacted by the authoritie aforesaid, that your suppliant during his life, and the said governours and their successors for the time being, or the most part of them, after his decease, shall and may have full power and lawful authoritie to breake, alter and change the said seale: and that your said orator during his life, and the said governours and their successors for the time being, or the most part of them, after his decease, shall and may have full power and authoritie to nominate and appoint, and shall and may nominate and appoint, when and as often as he and they shall think good, such person and persons as he and they shall think meete to be maister, preacher, schoolemaster, usher, poore men, poore children, and officers of the said hospitall; and when any of them by death, resignation, deprivation, or otherwise, shall become voide, shall and may within one month next after such avoydance, by writing under their said common seale, nominate and appoint one or more learned godly, discreet and meet men and persons, to be maister, preacher, schoolemaster, usher, poore men, poore children, and officers, in the places of them and every of them so deceasing, resigning, or otherwise becoming voide; and that in case the said governours, and their successors for the time being, or the most part of them, shall not within one month after such avoydance make such nomination and appointment, as aforesaid, that then, and so often, and in every such case, from and after the decease of your said orator, it shall and may be lawful to your Majestie, your heirs and successors, by your letters patents under the Great Seale of England, to nominate and appoint some meet, godly and learned men in and to the places voide, by such default of the said governours and their successors for the time being, or the most part of them, as is aforesaid: and that it shall and may be lawful to and for the said maister, preacher, schoolemaster, usher, poor people, poor children, and officers of the said hospitall,

to remaine, assemble, bee, and cohabite together in the said house, buildings, and hospitall: and that it may be further enacted by the authoritie aforesaid, and be it enacted by the authoritie aforesaid, that your said suppliant during his life, and that the said governors and their successors for the time being, or the most part of them, after his decease, shall and may have full power and authoritie, under the said common seale, to make, ordaine, set downe, and prescribe such rules, statutes and ordinances, for the order, rule, and government of the said hospitall, and of the said maister, preacher, schoolemaster, usher, poore men, poore children, and officers, and their successors, and for their and every of their stipends and allowances, for or towards their or any of their maintenance and relief, as to your said suppliant during his life, and the said governors and their successors for the time being, or the most part of them, after his decease, shall seem meete and convenient; and that the same orders, rules, statutes and ordinances so by him, them, or any of them made, set down, and prescribed as aforesaid, shall be and stand in full force and strength in law, the same not being repugnant nor contrarie to your Majesties prerogative royal, nor to the lawes or statutes of this your Majesties realme of England, nor to any ecclesiastical canons or constitutions of the Church of England then in force and use: and that your suppliant during his life, and the said governours and their successors for the time being, or the most part of them, and such of them as your suppliant shall thereto appoint and nominate, shall and may, after the decease of your said suppliant, have power and authoritie to visit the said hospitall, and to order, reforme, and redresse all disorders and abuses in and touching the government and disposing of the same; and further, to censure, suspend and deprive the said maister, preacher, scholemaster, usher, poore men, poore children, and officers for the time being, and everie or any of them, as to him and them shall seem just, fit and convenient; so always that no visitation, act or thing, in or touching the same, be had, made or done, other than by your suppliant during his life, or the said governours and their successors for the time being, or the most part of them after his decease, or by such of them as your suppliant shall thereunto nominate and appoint: and also that it may be further enacted by the authoritie aforesaid; and be it enacted by the authoritie aforesaid, that the said preacher and minister of the Word of God which shall be placed in the same hospitall, to and for the uses and purposes aforesaid, from time to time hereafter,

shall and may enter into, have, hold, and enjoy the rectory and parsonage of Hallingburie aforesaid, in and to his own proper use and behoofe, for and during so long time as he shall be preacher and minister there, without any other presentation or admission, institution or induction; and that no lease shall hereafter be made of the said parsonage, or of any part or portion thereof, other than such as shall determine and end when and as soon as any such person as shall be the preacher or minister of and in the said hospitall, when the same lease shall be made, shall decease or resign, leave, or be put out and removed from the said place of preacher or minister of and in the said hospital; saving always, and reserving to your Majestie, your heirs and successors, and to all and everie other person and persons, bodies politique and corporate, their heirs and successors, other than your suppliant and his heirs, and the person and persons from whom the same were purchased, and their heirs, claiming only as heirs, all such estate, right, title, condition, claime, possession, rents, services, commons, demaunds, actions, remedies, recoveries, termes, interests, forfeits, commodities, advantages and hereditaments whatsoever, which they or any of them shall or may have, or of right ought to have, of, in, to, or out of the premisses, or any of them, or any part thereof, as if this Act had never been had or made, other than fine or fines of or for any alienation of the premisses, or any part or parcel thereof and other than respits of homage, or fines for non-payment of respit of homage at any time hereafter to be demanded, and other than title and right of libertie or liberties to enter into the same, or any of them, for or by reason of any statute heretofore made for, concerning or against any alienation or mortmaine.

Concordat cum Originali.

Ro. Bowyer, *Cler. Parl.*

Shortly after the confirmation of this Act, Mr. Sutton appears to have altered his mind respecting the site of his intended hospital. There is no recorded reason for this change of purpose: but it is easy to supply one. His connection with the family of Howard, and the desire of Lord Suffolk to part with the palace which

must have been filled with painful reminiscences of his family, as well as the situation of the house so suitable for Sutton's great design, all these considerations doubtless went to make up his final determination to purchase Howard House for the establishment of his hospital. The cost of this site was £13,000. On the 22nd June 1611 he obtained from King James letters patent, with licence of mortmain, for the foundation of his intended hospital on the ancient site of the Charterhouse.

The document here referred to is a necessary supplement of the Act of Parliament, previously given. It has also a further interest because it illustrates the difference of legislation under the Stuarts from the manner of our own times. The Act, it has been already seen, deliberately sanctions the foundation of the Hospital on a certain site: but this decision of the legislature was set aside by the royal grant of letters patent: "there being then no parliament."*

"James by the Grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c. To all to whom these presents shall come, greeting. Whereas at the last session of Parliament last past, one Act was made and passed, intituled, An Act to confirme and enable the erection and establishment of an hospitall, a free grammar school, and sundrye other godly and charitable acts and uses done, and intended to be done and performed by Thomas Sutton, Esquire (as by the same Act of Parliament more at large it doth, and may appear). And whereas sythence the said Act, the said Thomas Sutton hath purchased to him and his heires, of our right trusty, and well beloved cousin, and counceller Thomas, Earl of Suffolk, lord chamberlaine of our

* The first parliament of James I. met March 19th 1602-3. It was dissolved February 9th 1610-1. Three years passed before another election took place.

household, a great and large mansion house, commonly called the late dissolved Charter-house besides Smithfield, together with divers houses, buildings, courts, yards, gardens, orchards, closes, and other hereditaments to or with the same mansion house, used, or enjoyed, or reputed as part, parcel, member, or belonging thereunto within our countie of Middlesex. Which mansion house, and other the premisses, the said Thomas Sutton doth conceive to be a more fit, and commodious house and place, to place, erect, and found the said hospitall, and free schoole, and other the godly and charitable uses aforesaid, then in Hallingbury, alias Hallingbury Bouchers in the said Act mentioned. And to that end, the said Thomas Sutton hath been an humble sutor unto us, that we would be graciously pleased to give license, power, and authoritie unto him the said Thomas Sutton, to founde, erect, and establish an hospitall, and free-schoole, and other the godly charitable uses by him intended in the said house, called the late dissolved Charter-house besides Smithfield in the said premises in our said countie of Middlesex, and to incorporate the governours of the same hereafter named to be a body corporate, and politike, and to have perpetuall succession for ever in fact, deede, and name: and by such name of incorporation as is hereafter mentioned, to have full authoritie, and lawfull capacitie and abilitie to purchase, take, houlde, receive, and have to them and theire successors forever, mannors, lands, tenements, tythes, rents, revertions, annuityes, pentions, hereditaments, goodes, and chattells whatsoever, as well of us, our heirs and successors, as of any other person and persons whatsoever for the better maintenance of the said hospital, free-school, and other the godly and charitable uses aforesaid: knowe ye therefore that we graciously affecting so good and charitable a work, of our princely disposition and care for the furtherance thereof, and of our especiall grace, certaine knowledge, and mere motion have given, granted, and confirmed, and by these presents do give, grante and confirme for us, our heires and successors, unto the said Thomas Sutton, his heires, executors, administrators, and assignes, and to every of them, full power, license, and lawfull authoritie at all tymes hereafter, at his, and their will and pleasure, to place, erect, found and establish at, or in the said house, called the late dissolved Charter-house besides Smithfield, and other the premisses within our said countie of Middlesex, one hospitall, house, or place of abiding for the finding sustentation and relief of poore, aged, maimed, needy, or impotent people: as also that the said Thomas

Sutton during his life, and after his death the governors hereafter named, and their successors, and the survivors, and survivor of them, and his, and their successors for ever, and the governors thereof for the time being, and their successors, shall have full power, license, and lawfull authority at his, and their wills and pleasures respectively, from time to time, and at all times hereafter, to place therein such master and head of the said hospitall, and numbers of poor people, men and children, and such other members, and officers of the said hospitall, as to him the said Thomas Sutton during his life, and after his deathe to the said governors, and their successors, and to the survivors, and survivor of them, and to his, and their successors, and to the governors thereof for the time being, and their successors, shall seem convenient. And further we of our said special grace, certaine knowledge, and meere motion, have given, granted, and confirmed, and by these presents do give, grante and confirme for us, our heirs and successors, unto the said Thomas Sutton, his heirs, executors, administrators, and assignes, and to every of them, at his and their wills and pleasure, full power, licence, and lawful authority at all times hereafter, to place, erect, found, and establish at, or in the said house, called the late dissolved Charterhouse besides Smithfield, and other the premisses in our said countie of Middlesex: one free-school for the instructing, teaching, maintenance, and education of poor children or scholars; and that the said Thomas Sutton during his life, and after his decease, the governors hereafter named, and their successors, and the survivors, and survivor of them, and his, and their successors for ever, and the governors of the said hospital for the time being, and their successors, shall have full power, license, and lawful authoritie at his and their wills, and pleasures, from time to time, and at all times hereafter, to place therein such numbers of poor children or scholars, as to him the said Thomas Sutton during his life, and after his decease to the said governors, and their successors, and to the survivors and the survivor of them, and his and their successors, and to the governors of the said hospitall for the time being, and their successors shall seem convenient. And likewise one learned, able and sufficient person to be schoolmaster of the said schoole, and one other learned, able, and sufficient person to be usher thereof, to teach and instructe the said children in grammar: and also one learned and godly preacher to teach and preach the Word of God to all the said persons, poor people, and children, members, and officers, at, or in

the said house. And further, we of our said especial grace, certain knowledge, and meere motion, have ordained, constituted, assigned, limited, and appointed, and by these presents for us, our heirs, and successors do ordain, constitute, assigne, limit, and appoint, that the said house, and other the premisses, shall from henceforth for ever hereafter be, remain, continue, and be converted, imployed, and used for an hospitall, and house, and place, for the abideing, dwelling, sustentation and releife of such number of poor people, men and children, as the said Thomas Sutton during his life, and after his death the governors hereafter named, and their successors, and the survivors and survivor of them, and his, and their successors, and all, and every the governors of the hospitall for the time being, and their successors shall name, assigne, limit, or appoint, to be lodged, harboured, abide, and to be maintained, and relieved there, and for the abiding, dwelling, sustentation, and releife of such numbers of poor children, as the said Thomas Sutton during his life, and after his death the governors hereafter named, and their successors, and the survivors and survivor of them, and his, and their successors, and the governors of the said hospitall for the time being, and their successors, shall from time to time, name, assigne, limit, or appoint to be lodged, harboured, abide and to be maintained and relieved there, and for the abyding, dwelling, sustentation, and finding of one school-master, one usher, and one preacher, as is aforesaid, and of one head, or master of the said house and hospitall. And that it shall and may be lawfull to and for the said master, preacher, school-master, usher, poor people, children, members, and officers of the said hospital, or therein to be placed, for the time being, to assemble, be, remain, abide, and cohabite together in the said hospitall: and that the said hospitall shall for ever hereafter be incorporated, named, and called the Hospitall of King James, founded in Charter-house in the countie of Middlesex, at the humble petition, and only costs and charges of Thomas Sutton, Esquire, and the same hospitall and free-school, by the name of the Hospitall of King James, founded in Charter-house within the countie of Middlesex, at the humble petition, and only costs and charges of Thomas Sutton, Esquire; we do firmly by these presents, for us, our heires, and successors, erect, found, establish and confirme to have continuance for ever: and for the better maintenance and continuance of the said hospitall and free-school, and the said godly and charitable uses, entents and purposes, and that the same may

have, and take the better effect; and that all, and every the mannors, lands, tenements, and rents, reversions, services, and hereditaments, goods and chattells to be given, granted, conveyed, assigned, devised, willed, limitted or appointed, for the maintenance, sustentation and relief of the persons aforesaid in the said hospitall, may be the better governed, used, imployed, and bestowed for the maintenance of the persons in the said hospitall, for the time being to have continewance for ever, we will and ordain, and do appoint, assigne, limit, and name, and for us, oure heirs, and successors do grant, and ordain by these presents, that there shall be for ever hereafter sixteen persons, which shall be called governors of the lands, possessions, revenues and goods of the Hospitall of King James, founded in Charter-house within the countie of Middlesex, at the humble petition, and only costs and charges of Thomas Sutton, Esquire: and for that purpose we have elected, nominated, ordained, assigned, constituted, limited and appointed, and by these presents, do for us, our heirs, and successors, elect, nominate, ordain, assigne, constitute, limit, and appoint the Right Reverend Father in God, George, now Archbishop of Canterbury, our right trustie and well-beloved councellor Thomas, Lord Ellesmere, Lord Chancellor of England, our right trustie and well-beloved cousin and counsellor Robert, Earl of Salisbury, Lord High Treasurer of England, John, the elect Bishop of London, Launcelot, now Bishop of Ely, Sir Edward Coke, Knight, Chief Justice of the Common-Pleas, Sir Thomas Foster, Knight, one of our Justices of our Court of Common-Pleas, Sir Henry Hobart, Knight and Barronet, our Attorney General, John Overall, now Dean of the Cathedrall Church of St. Paul in London, George Mountain, Dean of the Collegiate Church of Westminster, Henry Thursbye, Esq., one of the Masters of our Court of Chancerye, Jeffery Nightingale, Esquire, Richard Sutton, Esquire, John Lawe, Gent., Thomas Browne, Gent., and the Master of the Hospitall of King James, founded in Charter-house within the countie of Middlesex, at the humble petition and only costs and charges of Thomas Sutton, Esquire; and such person and persons as shall from time to time be master, or masters of the said hospitall, for, and during such time as they shall be masters thereof, to be the first and present governors of the lands, possessions, revenues, and goods of the Hospitall of King James, founded in Charter-house within the countie of Middlesex, at the humble petition and only costs and charges of Thomas Sutton, Esquire: and that they and the survivors of them, and such as

the survivors or survivor of them shall from time to time elect, and choose to make up the number of sixteen, when, and as often as any of them, or any of their successors shall happen to decease or be removed from being governors, or governor thereof, shall be incorporated, and have a perpetual succession for ever in deed, fact, and name, and shall be one body corporate and politique: and that the said persons, and their successors and the survivors and survivor of them, and his and their successors, and such as shall be elected and chosen to succeed them as aforesaid, shall be incorporated, named, and called by the name of the governors of the lands, possessions, revenues and goods of the Hospitall of King James, founded in Charter-house within the county of Middlesex, at the humble petition, and onlie costs and charges of Thomas Sutton, Esquire: and them by the name of the governors of the lands, possessions, revenues and goods of the Hospitall of King James, founded in Charter-house within the countie of Middlesex, at the humble petition and only costs and charges of Thomas Sutton, Esquire, one bodie corporate and politique by that name to have perpetual succession for ever to endure. We do, by these presents for us, our heires and successors, really and fully incorporate, make, erect, ordaine, name, constitute, and establish, and that by the same name of the governors of the lands, possessions, revenues and goods of the Hospitall of King James, founded in Charter-house within the countie of Middlesex, at the humble petition and only costs and charges of Thomas Sutton, Esquire, they and their successors, and survivors and survivor of them, and his, and their successors, and the persons to be elected and chosen as aforesaid, shall for ever hereafter be incorporated, named and called, and shall by the same name have perpetual succession for ever; and that they by the same name be, and shall be and continue persons able and capable in the law from time to time, and shall by that name of incorporation have full power, authoritie and lawfull capacitie and abilitie to purchase, take, hold, receive, enjoy, and have to them, and their successors, for ever, as well goods and chattells, as mannors, lands, tenements, rents, reversions, annuities, and hereditaments whatsoever, as well of us, our heirs and successors, as of the said Thomas Sutton, his heirs, executors or assignes, or any other person or persons whatsoever, and also that the said governors for the time being, and their successors shall have full power and lawful authority by the aforesaid name of governors of the lands, possessions, revenues, and goods of the Hospitall of King James,

founded in Charter-house within the countie of Middlesex, at the humble petition and only costs and charges of Thomas Sutton, Esquire, to sue and to be sued, implead and to be impleaded, to answer and to be answered unto in all manner of courts and places that now are or hereafter shall be within this our realm or elsewhere, as well temporal as spiritual, in all manner of suits whatsoever, and of what nature and kinde soever such suits or actions be or shall be, in the same and as ample manner, and forme to all intents, constructions and purposes, as any other person or persons, bodies politique or corporate of this our realm of England, being able persons in law, may doe: and furthermore we will and grant, by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, unto the said governors for the time being and their successors, that they and their successors shall have and enjoy for ever a common seale, wherein shall be ingraven the name and armes of the said Thomas Sutton, whereby the same corporation shall or may seale any manner of instrument touching the same corporation, and the manors, lands, tenements, rents, reversions, annuities and hereditaments, goods, chattels, and other things thereunto belonging, or in any wise touching or concerning the same: nevertheless it is our true intent and meaning, that neither the said governors for the time being, and their successors, nor any of them, shall do or suffer to be done, at any time hereafter, any act or thing whereby or by means whereof any of the mannors, lands, tenements, rents, reversions, annuities, or hereditaments of the said incorporation, or any estate, interest, possession, or propertie of or in the same, or any of them shall be conveyed, vested, or transferred in, or to any other whatsoever, contrarie to the true meaning hereof, other than by such leases as are hereafter mentioned, and that in such manner and forme as is hereafter expressed, and not otherwise, and that such construction shall be made upon this foundation and incorporation, as shall be most beneficiall and available for the maintenance of the poore, and for the repressing, and avoiding of all acts and devices to be invented or put in use contrary to the true meaning of these presents: and therefore our will and pleasure is, and so for us our heirs and successors we do ordaine, that the said governors for the time being, or their successors, or any of them, shall not make any lease, grant, conveyance, or estate of any the said mannors, lands, tenements or hereditaments which shall exceed the number of one and twenty years, and that either in possession, or not above two years before the end and expiration

or determination of the estate or estates in possession, and whereupon the accustomable yearly rent or more by the greater part of five years next before the making of any such lease reserved, due or payable, shall not be reserved and yearly payable during the continuance of every such lease: and also we do ordaine, grant, and appoint by these presents for us our heirs and successors, that so often and whensoever any one or more of the said governors for the time being, or any other governor or governors that shall be chosen hereafter, shall fortune to depart this life, or to be removed from his or their place of governor or governors, that then and so often the residue of the said governor or governors and their successors shall be, continue, and remain incorporate by the same name of the governors of the lands, possessions, revenues and goods of the Hospitall of King James, founded in Charter-house, within the countie of Middlesex, at the humble petition and only costs and charges of Thomas Sutton, Esquire, to all intents, constructions, and purposes according to the true meaning of these presents, as if all the said governor and governors had continued, and that then and so often it shall be lawfull for the rest of the governors, or the greater number of them to elect, nominate, choose, and appoint one or more meete person, or persons, according to the true intent and meaning of these presents, into the room and place, or rooms and places of every such governor or governors which shall so depart this life or be removed, which person and persons so nominated, elected, chosen, and agreed upon by the said governors, or by the greater number of them, shall be, and shall be reputed and taken from the time of his or their election, to be from thenceforth, together with the others, governors of the said hospitall, and after this manner to proceed whensoever and as often as need shall require, and the same election to be made within two months that any of the said governor or governors shall depart this life, or be removed: and that the said Thomas Sutton during his life, and after his decease the said governors for the time being, or the more part of them, shall have full power and authority to nominate, assigne, and appoint, and shall, and may name, assigne, and appoint, when and as often as he and they shall think good, such number and numbers of person and persons as he and they shall thinke convenient to be poor men, children and schollars, master, preacher, schoolmaster, usher, members, officer and officers of, or for the said hospitall, as he the said Thomas Sutton during his life, and

after his decease the governors for the time being and their successors, or the more part of them, shall think meete and convenient: nevertheless if the rents, revenues, or profits of all or any of the mannors, lands, tenements, and hereditaments, goods, or chattels, at any time to be granted and conveyed to the said governors of the said hospitall and their successors, for the maintenance of the people in the said hospitall, shall happen to increase, or to be raised, or augmented to a better or greater yearly value than formerly the same was, or that the rents, revenues and possessions of the said hospitall shall be further increased by the determination of any former estates in any of the said possessions of the said hospitall, or otherwise; that all and every such increase shall be imployed to the maintenance of more and other poor people to be placed in the said hospitall, or to the further augmentation of the allowances of those persons that for the time being shall be in the said hospitall, according to the true intent and meaning of these presents, and shall not be converted or imployed to any private use: and also we do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, will, grant and ordaine, that whensoever and as often as any of the said places or rooms of any of the said master, preacher, school-master, or usher, poor men or children, schollars, members, or officers, or any of them, shall happen to become void by death, resignation, deprivation, or otherwise, that then and so often it shall and may be lawfull for the said Thomas Sutton during his life, and after his death, for the said governors for the time being, and their successors or the most part of them, within one month after such avoidance, by writing under the seale of the said Thomas Sutton during his life, and after his death by the said governors for the time being, and their successors, under their common seale, to nominate and appoint other meet person and persons in the rooms, place, and places of them and every of them so deceasing, resigning, or otherwise becoming void: and if in case the said governors and their successors for the time being, or the most part of them, shall not within two months after such avoidance, nominate, assigne, and appoint as is aforesaid, that then and so often and in every such case, from and after the death of the said Thomas Sutton, it shall be lawfull for us, our heirs and successors, by letters patents under the Great Seale of England, or Privy Seale, to nominate and appoint meete person and persons to all and every such office, rooms, place and places as shall remaine voide for the time aforesaid, by the default of the said governors and

their successors, as is aforesaid: and we do further, of our especial grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion for us, our heirs, and successors, give and grant, that the said master, preacher, schoolmaster, usher, poor men, children, schollars, members, and officers of the said hospitall, and every of them, shall be allowed, ordered, directed, visited, placed, or displaced by the said Thomas Sutton during his life, and after his death by the said governor and governors, and their successors or the more part of them, according to such allowances, rules, statutes, and ordinances, as shall be appointed, set forth, made, devised, or established by the said Thomas Sutton during his life, in writing under his hand and seale, and after his death by the governors for the time being, and their successors, or the more part of them under the said common seal: and further we have given and granted, and by these presents do give and grant to the said Thomas Sutton during his life, by writing under his hand and seale, and to the said governors and their successors for the time being, or the more part of them after his decease, under the said common seal, to make, set down, and appoint such rules, statutes and ordinances, for the rule, government, and well ordering the said hospitall, and of the said master, preacher, school-master, usher, poor people, children, schollars, members, and officers for the time being, and for their and every of their wages, stipends, and allowances, for and towards their or any of their maintenance and relief, as to the said Thomas Sutton during his life, and after his decease to the said governors and their successors for the time being, or the more part of them, shall seem meet and convenient: and that the same orders, rules, statutes, and ordinances so by him, them, or any of them to be made, set downe, and prescribed as aforesaid, shall be and stand in full force and strength in law, to all constructions, intents, and purposes, the same being not repugnant to our prerogative royal, nor contrary to the laws, and statutes of this our realm of England, nor to any ecclesiastical canons or constitutions of the Church of England, which then shall be in force: and that for the better government of the said hospitall, the said Thomas Sutton during his life, and after his decease, the said governors for the time being, or the most part of them, or such and so many of them as the said Thomas Sutton shall by his writing under his hand and seal thereunto assigne, appoint, and nominate, shall and may after the decease of the said Thomas Sutton have full power and lawful authority to visit, order, and punish, place, or displace the master, preacher, school-

master, usher, poor people, schollars, members and officers of the said hospitall and every of them, and to order, reform and redress all and every the disorders, misdemeanors, offences, and abuses in the persons aforesaid, and every of them, or in the said hospitall or free-school, or in or touching the government, order, and disposing of the same, and to censure, suspend, deprive, and displace the said master, preacher, school-master, usher, poor people, schollars, members and officers, and all, every or any of them, as to him the said Thomas Sutton during his life, and after his death, to the said governors for the time being and their successors, or the more part of them, or to such and so many of them as the said Thomas Sutton by any his writing under his hand and seal shall thereunto assigne, nominate and appoint, shall to him or them respectively seem fit, just, and convenient. So always that no visitation, act, or thing in or touching the same, be had, made, or done by any person or persons during the life of the said Thomas Sutton, other than by the said Thomas Sutton, and after his death by the said governors for the time being and their successors, or the more part of them, or by such or so many of them as the said Thomas Sutton by his writing under his hand and seal shall nominate and appoint thereunto: and we of our further special grace, certain knowledge, and meer motion, and by our supreme power and authority for us, our heirs and successors do will, ordain, and grant, that the said hospitall, and the master, preacher, school-master, usher, members, officers, and all other the persons to be placed in the said hospitall, shall for ever hereafter be exempted and freed of and from all visitation, punishment, and correction to be had, used, or exercised in or upon them or any of them by the ordinary of the diocess for the time being, or by any other person or persons whatsoever, other than by the said Thomas Sutton during his life, and after his death, by the said governors for the time being, and their successors: and further know ye, that we for the considerations aforesaid, of our special grace, certain knowledge, and meer motion, have given and granted, and by these presents for us, our heirs and successors do give and grant to the said governors of the lands, possessions, revenues and goods of the Hospitall of King James, founded in Charter-house within the countie of Middlesex, at the humble petition and only costs and charges of Thomas Sutton, Esquire, and to their successors for ever, our special licence, and free and lawful liberty, power and authority to get, purchase, receive and take to them, and their successors for ever,

for the maintenance, sustentation, and relief of all and every the person and persons to be placed in the said hospitall, of and from the said Thomas Sutton his heirs and assignes, the said great and large mansion house, commonly called Charter-house besides Smithfield, together with the houses, buildings, courts, yards, gardens, orchards, closes, and other hereditaments, lately purchased by the said Thomas Sutton, of the said Thomas, Earl of Suffolk. And all those his mannors and lordships of Southminster, Norton, Little Hallingbury, alias Hallingbury Bouchers, and Much Stambridge in the countie of Essex, with all their and every of their rights, members, and appurtenances whatsoever, and also all those his mannors and lordships of Bustingthorpe, alias Buslingthorp and Dunnesby in the countie of Lincoln, with their and every of their rights, members, and appurtenances whatsoever. And also all those his mannors of Salthorp, alias Saltrop, alias Halthrop, Chilton, and Blackgrove in the county of Wilts, with their and every of their rights, members and appurtenances; and also all those his lands and pasture grounds called Blackgrove, containing by estimation two hundred acres of pasture with the appurtenances in Blackgrove and Wroughton in the said county of Wilts, and all that his mannor of Missenden otherwise called the mannors of Missenden, in the parishes of Wroughton, Lydyerde, and Tregose in the said county of Wilts, with all his rights, members, and appurtenances: and all that his mannor of Elcombe and Parke, called Elcombe-Parke, with the appurtenances in the said county of Wilts: and also all that his mannor of Watlescote, alias Wiglescote, alias Wigelscete, with the appurtenances in the said county of Wilts: and also all that his mannor of Westcote, alias Wescete, with the appurtenances in the said county of Wilts: and also all those his lands and pastures containing by estimation one hundred acres of land, and threescore acres of pasture, with the appurtenances in Wiglescote and Wroughton in the said county of Wilts: and all that his mannor of Uffcote with the appurtenances in the said county of Wilts: and also all those his two messuages and one thousand acres of land, two thousand acres of pasture, three hundred acres of meadow, and three hundred acres of wood, with the appurtenances in Broadhinton in the said county of Wilts: and also all those the mannors and lordships of Campes, alias Campes-Castle, otherwise called Castle Campes with the appurtenances, situate, lying, being, extending in the counties of Cambridge and Essex, or in either of them, or elsewhere within the realm of England; and

also all that his mannor of Balsham in the county of Cambridge, with all and singular the rights, members and appurtenances thereof whatsoever; and also all those his messuages and lands, situate, lying and being in the parishes of Hackney and Tottenham in the county of Middlesex or in either of them, with their and every of their rights, members and appurtenances whatsoever, which said messuage was lately purchased of Sir William Bowyer, Knight, and the said lands in Tottenham now are or lately were in the tenure or occupation of William Benning, yeoman: and also all and singular the mannors, lordships, messuages, lands, tenements, reversions, services, meadows, pastures, woods, advowsons, patronages of churches and hereditaments of the said Thomas Sutton whatsoever, situate, lying, or being within the said counties of Essex, Lincoln, Wilts, Cambridge, and Middlesex, or in any of them, with all and every their rights, members, and appurtenances whatsoever, or any such, and so many and such part of the said mannors, advowsons, lands, tenements, and hereditaments, or of any part thereof, as the said Thomas Sutton shall think meet: and also all letters patents, indentures, deeds, evidences, bonds and writings concerning the premisses or any of them, which shall be given and granted by the said Thomas Sutton to the said governors and their successors, and all such conditions, warrants, vouchers, actions, suits, entries, benefits, and demands as shall be or may be had by any person or persons upon or by reason of them or any of them (except all his mannors or lordships of Littlebury and Hadstocke, with the appurtenances in the said county of Essex aforesaid) or in either of them, though the premisses or any of them be holden of us immediately in chief, or by knights service, or otherwise howsoever, and without any license or pardon for alienation of them or any of them, the statute of mortmaine, or any other act, statute, ordinance, or provision to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding: and also we do give and grant like licence, power, and authority to the said Thomas Sutton, his heirs and assignes, to give, grant, and assure unto the said governors, and their successors, for the uses, intents, and purposes aforesaid, all and every the said great and large mansion-house commonly called Charter-house besides Smithfield, together with the houses, buildings, courts, yards, gardens, orchards, closes, and other hereditaments lately purchased by the said Thomas Sutton, of the said Thomas, Earl of Suffolk; and all those his mannors and lordships of Southminster, Norton, Little Hallingbury, alias

Hallingbury Bouchers, and Much Stambridge in the said county of Essex, with all their and every of their rights, members and appurtenances whatsoever: and also all those his mannors and lordships of Bustingthorpe, alias Buslingthorpe and Dunnesby in the county of Lincoln, with their and every of their rights, members, and appurtenances whatsoever: and also all those his mannors of Salthorpe, alias Saltrope, alias Halthrop, Chilton and Blackgrove in the county of Wilts, with their and every of their rights, members, and appurtenances: and also all those his lands and pasture grounds called Blackgrove, containing by estimation two hundred acres of pasture, with their appurtenances in Blackgrove and Wroughton in the said county of Wilts: and also all that his mannor of Missenden, otherwise called the mannor of Misunden in the parishes of Wroughton, Lydeyard and Tregose in the said county of Wilts, with all his rights, members and appurtenances; and all that his mannor of Elcomb, and the park called Elcomb-Park, with the appurtenances in the said county of Wilts: and also all that his mannor of Watlescote, alias Wiglescete, alias Wigelscote with the appurtenances in the said county of Wilts: and also all that his mannor of Wescote, alias Wescote, with the appurtenances in the said county of Wilts; and also all those his lands and pastures, containing by estimation one hundred acres of land, and threescore acres of pasture, with the appurtenances in Wiglescote and Wroughton in the said county of Wilts: and all that his mannors of Uffcote with the appurtenances in the said county of Wilts: and also all those his two messuages, and one thousand acres of land, two thousand acres of pasture, three hundred acres of meadow, and three hundred acres of wood, with the appurtenances, in Brodehinton, in the said county of Wilts: and all those his mannors and lordships of Campes, alias Campes-Castle, otherwise called Castle Campes, with the appurtenances, situate, lying, and being, and extending in the counties of Cambridge and Essex, or in either of them, or elsewhere within the realm of England: and also all that his mannor of Balsham in the county of Cambridge with all and singular the rights, members, and appurtenances thereof whatsoever: and all those his messuages and lands, situate, lying, and being in the parishes of Hackney and Tottenham, in the county of Middlesex, or in either of them, with their and either of their rights, members, and appurtenances whatsoever, which said messuage was lately purchased of Sir William Bower, Knight, and the said lands in Tottenham now are or late were in the

tenure or occupation of William Bonning, Yeoman: and also all and singular the mannors, lordships, messuages, lands, tenements, reversions, services, meadows, pastures, woods, advowsons, patronages of churches, and hereditaments of the said Thomas Sutton whatsoever, situate, lying, or being within the said counties of Essex, Lincoln, Wilts, Cambridge, and Middlesex, or any of them, with all and every of their rights, members and appurtenances whatsoever, or any such, and so many and such part of the said mannors, advowsons, lands, tenements, and hereditaments, or of any part thereof, as the said Thomas Sutton shall think meete: and also all letters patents, indentures, deeds, evidences, bonds, and writings concerning the premisses, or any of them which shall be so given and granted by the said Thomas Sutton to the said governors and their successors; and all such conditions, warrants, vouchers, actions, suits, entries, benefits, and demands, as shall be or may be had by any person or persons upon or by reason of them or any of them (except all his mannors and lordships of Littlebury and Hadstocke, with the appurtenances, in the said county of Essex aforesaid) or in either of them, though the premisses or any of them be holden of us immediately in chief, or by knights service, or otherwise howsoever, and without any licence or pardon for alienation of them or any of them, the statute of mortmaine, or any other act, statute, ordinance, or provision whatsoever to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding: and our further will and pleasure is, and we do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, ordaine, and straightly charge and command, that whensoever, and as often as any of the churches, parsonages, vicarages, chapels, and other spiritual livings, (the advowsons, patronages, or donations, whereof are hereby meant or mentioned to be licensed to be given by the said Thomas Sutton, to the said governors and their successors for and towards the maintenance of the said godly and charitable uses) shall happen to be voide, or become presentative or presentable, or to be given, or collated unto by reason of the death, resignation, or deprivation of any incumbent or incumbents of them, or of any of them, or by any other means whatsoever. That then, and so often the said governors for the time being, and their successors, or the greater part of them for the time being, shall present, preferr, and collate thereunto such meete and sufficient persons as they shall think fit. Nevertheless our full meaning and direction in this behalf is, and so we do by these presents, for us, our heirs, and successors, ordain, and declare, that such, and

so many of the schollars, which shall from time to time be brought up, and taught in the said hospitall, and every of them as shall after be fully qualified and become meete to take upon them, or any of them, the charge of the said churches, rectories, parsonages, vicarages, chapels, and other spiritual livings aforesaid, shall, as near as may be, from time to time, be by the said governors and their successors, presented, preferred, and collated thereunto before any other person or persons whatsoever, avoiding as much as may be the giving of more benefices then one to any one incumbent: and to the end that all suspicion of indirect dealing, which might hereafter be used or put in practice by the aforesaid governors or their successors, or any of them, contrary to the true intent and meaning of these presents, may be prevented and taken away, our will and pleasure is, and we do by these presents, for us, our heirs, and successors ordain, and straightly charge and command, that the mannors, lands, tenements, and hereditaments, and other things which at any time hereafter shall be given, granted, or conveyed for the maintenance of the said godly and charitable uses before in these presents mentioned, nor any part or parcel of them, or of any of them, shall at any time hereafter be by the said governors, or their successors, or any of them, leased, demised, granted, or conveyed to them the said governors, or their successors, or to any of them, or to any other person and persons whatsoever, for or to the use, benefit, or behoof of the said governors, or of their successors, or any of them, although express mention of the clear yearly value and certainty of the premisses, or any of them, or of any other gifts or grants by us or any of our progenitors or predecessors to the aforesaid Thomas Sutton heretofore made, is not made, or any statute, act, ordinance, provision, proclamation, or restraint to the contrary hereof had, made, ordained or provided, or any other thing, cause, or matter whatsoever in any wise notwithstanding: in witness whereof, we have caused these our letters to be made patents, witness our self at Westminster, the two and twentieth day of June, in the ninth year of our reign of England, France, and Ireland, and of Scotland the four and fortieth.

"*Per Breve de privato Sigillo.*"

The deed of gift mentioned in the letters patent was signed on the 1st of November 1611. On the 2nd Mr. Sutton made his will: and so the plan of the Founder of

Sutton's Hospital was finally matured. "This," says Fuller, "is the masterpiece of Protestant English Charity: designed (by the Founder) in his life; completed after his death; begun, continued, and finished, with buildings and endowments, sine causâ sociâ, solely at his own charges: wherein Mr. Sutton appears peerless in all Christendom, on an equal standard and valuation of revenue." *

The last Will and Testament of Thomas Sutton.

"In the name of God, Amen. The second day of November, in the year of our Lord God, one thousand six hundred and eleven, I Thomas Sutton of Camps Castle, in the county of Cambridge, Esquire, being weak in body, and of good and perfect mind and memory, thanks be given to Almighty God for the same; do make and declare this my last will and testament in manner and form following; that is to say, first, and principally, I commend my soul into the hands of Almighty God, trusting through his mercy, and by the precious death and passion of my Saviour and Redeemer Jesus Christ to be saved, and to inherit the kingdom of heaven for ever. And my body I will to be buried where, and in what sort it shall seem meet and convenient to mine executor or executors, and supervisor or supervisors of this my last will and testament, with the least pomp and charge that may be.

"Item, I give to every one of the children of Richard Coxe, late bishop of Ely, who shall be living at the time of my death, ten pounds apiece, of lawful money of England.

"Item, I give to the children of Eleanor Aske, late wife of Robert Aske, of Aughton, in the county of York, Esquire, the sum of one hundred pounds of good and lawful money of England, to be equally distributed amongst them.

"Item, I give to the poor town of Berwick-upon-Tweed, one hundred marks of lawful money of England, to be distributed amongst the poor there, by the discretion of the chief governor

---

* Fuller's Worthies of Lincolnshire. But the historian misnames the Founder of Charterhouse, calling him *Richard* Sutton.

and preacher there for the time being, to be paid within one year after my decease.

"Also I give to Andrew Westwood's wife, of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, or to her children, or to so many of them as shall be living at my death, ten pounds, to be bestowed equally amongst them.

"And I give to the poor people of Stoke-Newington, in the county of Middlesex, ten pounds to be distributed by the constables, church-wardens, and parson of the same town for the time being, to the most needy people there.

"Also I give to Mr. Gray, dwelling in Yorkshire, sometimes servant to Ambrose, Earl of Warwick, or to his children, if any of them be living at my decease, forty pounds of good and lawful money of England, to be distributed equally amongst them within six months after my decease.

"Also I give to the children of my aunt White, or to so many of them as shall be living at my decease, one hundred marks, to be equally distributed amongst them within six months next after my decease.

"Also I give to William Cocket, son to William Cocket late alderman of the city of Lincoln, one hundred pounds of lawful money of England.

"Also I give to the children of John Copeland, late of Skillingthorp, in the county of Lincoln, or to so many of them as shall be living at the time of my decease, one hundred pounds of lawful money of England, to be equally distributed amongst them, saving unto Elizabeth Copeland; for my meaning is, that she shall not have any part of the said legacy of one hundred pounds.

"And unto the said Elizabeth Copeland, I give the sum of one hundred pounds of lawful money of England, to be paid unto her at the day of her marriage, or within one year after my decease.

"Item, I give unto Jane Upton, one of the daughters of Elizabeth Upton, late wife of Hamond Upton, of Wainfleet, in the county of Lincoln, Esquire, the sum of fifty pounds of lawful money of England.

"And to every other of the children of the said Elizabeth, who shall be living at the time of my decease, twenty pounds apiece of lawful money of England, to be paid within six months next after my decease.

"Also I give to the children of one Skelton, late of Lowth, in the county of Lincoln, and sometimes towards the Henneages of Heniton in the said county, ten pounds, to be equally divided amongst them.

"Item, I give to the children of Thomas Pynner, late of Micham, in the county of Surry, Esquire, or to so many of them as shall be living at my decease, twenty pounds, to be equally distributed amongst them.

"Item, I give to the children of Henry Tutty, late gunner in Berwick, or to so many of them as shall be living at my decease, ten pounds of lawfull money of England, to be equally distributed amongst them.

"Also I give to my neice, Elizabeth Allen, two hundred pounds of lawful money of England. And to every of her children which shall be living at my decease, one hundred marks apiece.

"Item, I give to Simon Baxter, if he be living at my decease, three hundred pounds of lawful money of England, if not, then I give the same sum to his child, or children, to be equally divided amongst them.

"Item, I give unto Francis Baxter, if he be living at my decease, five hundred marks of lawful money of England, if not, I give the same sum to his child, or children, to be equally divided amongst them.

"Item, I give unto each of my serving men, to whom I give wages, with my cook, that shall be alive at my decease, thirteen pounds, six shillings and eightpence, over and above their wages then due.

"Item, I give to so many of my maid-servants, as I have in my house at the time of my decease, five marks apiece, over and above their wages.

"Item, I give unto the children of Reynold Tomps, my late servant, if any of them be alive at my death, ten pounds, to be distributed amongst them.

"Item, I give to the fishermen of the town of Ostend, in the Low Countries, one hundred pounds of lawful English money to be given and distributed amongst the poorest fishermen of that town, or for want of a competent number of them, to call in some other of that town to have a share of the said one hundred pounds, by the discretion of the governor of that town and his assistants, and the parson and minister there for the time being, the same to be paid within one year after my decease.

"Item, I give towards the mending of the highways between Islington and Newington, in the county of Middlesex, twenty-six pounds thirteen shillings and fourpence of lawful money of England, to be imployed and bestowed by the good oversight of mine executor or executors, the constable of Newington and the

church-wardens there for the time being, the same highways to be amended, made, and holpen within one year after my decease.

"Item, I give towards the amending of the highways between Ashden and Walden, in the county of Essex, called Walden-Lane, one hundred pounds of lawful money of England; and towards amending the highways between Great Lynton, in the county of Cambridge, and the said town of Walden, threescore and six pounds thirteen shillings and four-pence of lawful money of England; and I also give towards the amending of Horsheath-Lane, threescore pounds of lawful money of England.

"All these works next before recited, I will shall be overseen and guided by the two head constables thereunto next adjoining, the treasurer of Walden, and the parsons of Ashden, Hadstock, and Horsheath, and the constables of the same parishes for the time being; and the same several sums to be imployed, and the said highways so to be amended, so far as the same sums will extend, within one year after my decease.

"Also I give towards the amending of the bridges, and the ordinary highways between Southminster and Maldon, in the said county of Essex, the sum of one hundred pounds of lawful money of England, and the same work to be overseen and guided by the two head constables thereunto next adjoining, and the parsons or vicars of Southminster and Maldon for the time being, and the same money to be so imployed, and the highways so amended, within one year after my decease.

"Item, I give to Mr. Robert Dudley, alderman of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, or to his children, or to so many of his children as shall be living at the time of my decease, thirty pounds of lawful money of England, which he oweth me.

"And I will, and do earnestly charge mine executor, or executors, to deliver into the treasury or chamber of the city of London, one thousand pounds in current money of England, with such care and foresight to be had, that such bonds or assurances be taken of the Lord Mayor and Alderman of the same city that for the time shall be, by learned counsel in the law, as the same may be safe, and for ever go and be converted to these uses following: that is to say, that the said thousand pounds be yearly lent and put forth to ten young merchant men, not having any great stock of their own, being young men, and of honest life and conversation, and towardly in their trades; that is, to every one of them one hundred pounds for a year, without paying any thing for the same: and these ten young merchants to be chosen and appointed

by the Lord Mayor and aldermen of the said city that for the time shall be, and the dean of the cathedral church of St. Paul in London for the time being, provided as before, that none have or continue the said hundred pounds so appointed above one year.

"Item, I will and give to the children of Justinian Crome, draper, sometimes dwelling in the city of Lincoln, or to his childrens children, if any of them shall be living at my decease, twenty pounds of lawful money of England, to be equally divided amongst them.

"I give also to the wife and children or child of Martin Wathersine, Dutchman, sometime dwelling at the sign of the White-Bear, in Buttolph-Lane, London, if any of them be living at the time of my death, ten pounds, to be equally divided amongst them.

"Item, I give to the next kinsman or kinswoman of Henry Vavering, Dutchman, smith, sometimes dwelling in Berwick, three pounds, six shillings, eightpence.

"Item, I give and bequeath unto Sir Francis Popham, Knight, out of respect and good will which I bear unto his wife, being the daughter of my late deceased dear wife, the sum of two thousand marks of lawful money of England, upon condition nevertheless, and so that the said Sir Francis Popham, and the said Lady Ann his wife, give a sufficient discharge and a general release to mine executor or executors, as well for that sum, as also for the receipt of all the rest of her part of portion of the plate, money and houshold stuff already paid, and delivered to them or to their use, as appeareth by several bills or notes subscribed with my own hand, which I do think to be the very true half, and better half of the said plate, money and houshold-stuff, part whereof was delivered by one John Fishborne, my late servant, to Sir John Popham, Knight, late Lord Chief Justice of England, at his late house in Chancery-Lane. The rest of the houshold-stuff, as chairs, stools, bedsteads, kitching-stuff, tables, and such like, was delivered by the said Fishborne to the said Sir John Popham's servants at Newington, one thousand pounds in money paid in this sort, viz. to Sir John Popham, by his servant Straker, upon the said Sir John's bill before marriage three hundred pounds, which bill after the marriage I returned to the said Sir John Popham; seven hundred pounds were paid to the said Sir John Popham upon the marriage by one Mr. Anthony Law, late dwelling in Pater-noster-row, London; the better moiety of the plate due to Sir Francis Popham, was by the appointment of the said Sir

John Popham, received by one Mr. Clark, sometimes towards the said Sir John, and now a counsellor at the law of the Middle-Temple as I guess.

"Item, I give to my well-beloved friend Amy Popham, two hundred pounds to be paid to her at the day of her marriage, or when she shall accomplish the age of eighteen years.

"Item, I give to Francis Popham, Mary Popham, Elizabeth Popham, Jane Popham and Ann Popham, all daughters of the said Lady Ann Popham, one hundred pounds apiece, which several sums I will, shall be paid them at the days of their marriage, or when they shall accomplish the age of eighteen years: and my will and meaning is, that unless the said Sir Francis Popham, and the said Lady Ann his wife, do or shall give to mine executor, or executors, a general acquittance or release to the effect above-mentioned, that then, as well the said legacy of two thousand marks so willed to be given to the said Sir Francis Popham, and the Lady Ann his wife, as also the other several legacies given and bequeathed to every of the said children of the said Sir Francis Popham, and the Lady Ann his wife, shall remain and be to the use of mine executor, or executors, to be wholly disposed and given by them within one year after my decease, partly to the amending of highways, and partly to poor maidens marriages, and partly to the releasing of poor men that lie in prison for debt, and partly to the poor people of mine intended hospital, when it shall please God that it shall be established and erected. And whereas perhaps it is or may be supposed that the said Sir John Popham hath paid three hundred pounds to Sir Rowland Hayward of the city of London, alderman, as a debt due unto him upon the bonds of John Dudley and Thomas Dudley, I protest before God that I paid the whole three hundred pounds to the said Sir John Popham, in this sort to be paid over to the said Sir Rowland Hayward, viz. two hundred pounds by my servant John Fishborne, and one hundred pounds by one Henry Best, scrivener, near Temple-Bar. There was a demand made by Alderman Ducket's executors, for four hundred pounds owing to the said alderman upon the bonds of John Dudley and Thomas Dudley for copper, for the use of the Earl of Leicester, which the said earl transported into Spain, which debt was paid to the said alderman. For I myself was a messenger from the said earl to the said alderman, to let him understand that Mr. Bainham, my lord's special officer and receiver, should discharge them presently; and after it was discharged, the said alderman demanded interest for the forbearing

of the £400 which, as I remember, Thomas Dudley discharged: Mr. Justice Owen, as I remember, who had the doing in the testament of Alderman Ducket, promised to deliver in the said bond to Sir John Popham, then being Attorney, which I do believe he did: and whereas Mr. John Gardiner, brother to my late wife, by his last will and testament, did give unto Anne Dudley, now wife to Sir Francis Popham, one hundred pounds to be paid to her at the day of her marriage the same hundred pounds was and is paid by me, at or before the day of her marriage, viz. in a chain of gold, being fourscore and seventeen pounds, ten shillings in gold, and for the fashion paid to Master Padmore, goldsmith, in London, fifty shillings, which compleats the hundred pounds, for the which, amongst other things which I delivered in trust, I have no acquaintance.

"Item, I give to Mr. Jeffery Nightingale, Esquire, the sum of forty pounds of lawful money of England.

"Also I give to my cosen William Stapleton, son of Sir Richard Stapleton, Knight, one hundred marks.

"Item, I give unto the children of Sir Francis Willoughby, Knight, one hundred pounds of lawful money of England, to be equally distributed amongst them.

"Item, I give unto John Law, one of the procurators of the Arches, London, two hundred pounds.

"And to Mr. Thomas Brown, ten pounds to make him a ring.

"Item, I give to the wife and children of John Gardiner, my late wife's nephew, if they be living after my decease, being the mother and two sons, two hundred marks, to be equally divided amongst them.

"Item, I give to the poor people of Hadstock, to be distributed amongst them by the church-wardens and constables there for the time being, twenty pounds.

"Item, I give to the poor people of Littlebury, and to the poor people of Balsham, to be distributed as afore, to either town, twenty pounds.

"Item, I give to the parson and church-wardens of Balsham aforesaid, for the time being, to buy a bell withal, to be hanged up in the steeple, to amend the ring there, twenty pounds.

"Item, to the poor of Southminster, twenty pounds.

"Item, to the poor of Little Hallingbury, twenty pounds.

"Item, to the poor of Dunsby, in the county of Lincoln, twenty pounds.

"Item, I give to Robert Wright, poulterer, of Little Hallingbury, five pounds.

"Item, I give to widow Aske, late wife of Robert Aske, of London, goldsmith, twenty pounds which she oweth me.

"Item, my will and meaning is, that there shall no interest or increase for money be taken after my decease, so as he or they by whom any sums of money are or shall be owing, do pay the principal debt within one half year next after my decease.

"Item, I give and bequeath to the poor prisoners within the prisons of Ludgate, Newgate, the two Compters in London, the King's-Bench and the Marshalsea, the sum of two hundred pounds, to be paid and divided among the same prisoners by even and equal portions.

"Item, I give to Susan Price, at the day of her marriage, forty pounds.

"Item, I give to one Collins, of the town of Cursal, in Essex, five pounds.

"Item, I give to my good friends, Mrs. Heyward and Mrs. Law, either of them, ten pounds.

"Item, I give to Margaret Woodhal, my god-daughter, the sum of twenty pounds.

"Item, I give to all other my god-children, five pounds apiece.

"Item, I give and bequeath to the master and fellows, as the corporation of Jesus Colledge in Cambridge, the sum of five hundred marks of lawful money of England, to be imployed, used, and bestowed for or in some perpetuity, for and to the use, benefit, and behalf of the said colledge, master, fellows, and schollars, in such sort, manner and form as by the discretion of the bishop of Ely for the time being, the vice-chancellor of Cambridge for the time being, the master and fellows of the said colledge for the time being, and my executors hereafter named, or the survivor or survivors of them, if they be living when the bestowing of the said sum shall come in question, shall be thought best and most convenient.

"Item, I give and bequeath to the master and fellows, as the corporation of Magdalen Colledge in Cambridge, the sum of five hundred pounds, to be imployed, used, or bestowed for or in some perpetuity, for and to the use, benefit, and behalf of the said colledge, master and fellows, and schollars there, in such sort, manner and form as by the discretion, privity, and consent of the vice-chancellor in Cambridge for the time being, the master of Trinity Colledge in Cambridge for the time being, and the master

and fellows of the said Magdalen Colledge for the time being, shall be thought best and most convenient.

"And I will that my great chain of gold, and all my jewels of what kind soever they be, shall be sold by mine executors and supervisors hereafter named, towards the better and speedier payment of my legacies, and performance of this my last will and testament.

"And my will and meaning is, that all the legacies by me in this my testament and last will given and bequeathed, and for the payment of much whereof there is no certain time set down, shall be paid within two years next after my decease at the furthest.

"Also I give for and towards the building of mine intended hospital, chappel, and school-house, the sum of five thousand pounds, if I do not live to see it performed in my life time.

"And I desire, in the name of God, my feoffees, and my executor or executors, within two years after my decease, or sooner if they may conveniently (if it please not God I live to see and cause the same my determination to be performed and accomplished) to see and cause the same to be performed and accomplished.

"Also I give the residue of the years which I shall have at the time of my decease in one close called the Withies, lying within the town and fields of Cottingham, in the county of York, to the mayor and aldermen of Beverly, or to the governor of the same town and his assistants for the time being, to this end and purpose, that they shall distribute, or cause to be distributed, the yearly profit arising of the same over and above the yearly rent payable to the King's most excellent Majesty, amongst the poorest people dwelling within the said town of Beverly.

"Also I give to the mayor and aldermen of the city of Lincoln for the time being, all such profits and revenues as shall arise and grow of the parsonage of Glentham, within the county of Lincoln, and all the residue of the years that shall remain after my decease, to this intent, that they shall distribute and bestow, or cause to be distributed, and bestowed the same, amongst twenty of the poorest people that shall then be dwelling in the said city, with the consent and privity of the dean of the cathedral church of Lincoln, or the recorder of the same for the time being, (they the said mayor, aldermen, dean, and recorder, foreseeing that the parsonage be letten for their most benefit).

"Item, I give into the treasury or storehouse of mine intended

hospital, to begin their stock with, and to defend the rights of the house, one thousand pounds of lawful English money.

"And I give to every one of my feoffees whom I have put in trust about mine intended hospital (to whom I have not given any thing in this my last will) the sum of twenty-six pounds, thirteen shillings and fourpence of lawful English money.

"Item, I give to Amy Popham, if it please God she live to keep house, three feather-beds, and so many pair of Holland sheets, with the bolsters to them, and so many hangings of tapestry, as furnish her a bedchamber. The rest of my household-stuff I will shall be sold by mine executors for the speedier payment of my legacies, and performance of this my last will.

"Item, I give to the widow Tassel, of Balsham, the sum of five pounds of lawful money of England, and to Thomas Lawrence the elder, of the same town, five pounds of lawful money of England.

"Item, I give and bequeath unto the brother of Percival Graung, my late servant, deceased, the sum of twenty pounds of like lawful money of England.

"And of this my last will and testament, I make and ordain Richard Sutton, of London, Esquire, and John Law, one of the procurators of the Arches, London, my executors, charging them, as they will answer at the last day of judgment, that they, or one of them in the absence of the other, endeavour themselves, with all earnestness and diligence, to see this my will performed according to my true meaning and charitable intent.

"And I make overseers of this my last will and testament, the most reverend Father in God, George Abbot, Arch-bishop of Canterbury, unto whom I give and bequeath the sum of forty marks of lawful money of England, or a piece of plate of that value, at his election and choice.

"And also Launcelot Andrews, almonizer to the King's Majesty, my other supervisor and overseer of this my last will and testament, unto whom I give and bequeath the sum of twenty pounds of lawful money of England, or a piece of plate of that value, at his election and choice.

"Item, my will and full intent and meaning is, that if any person or persons whosoever, to whom I have in and by this my last will and testament given and bequeathed any legacy, or sum or sums of money, shall any ways gainsay, impugn, contradict, or impeach this my last will and testament, that then all and every one so impugning, contradicting, impeaching, or gainsaying this my last will and testament, and every of their children and

kinsfolks to whom I have in and by this my last will and testament given and bequeathed any legacy or sum or sums of money, shall have no part nor portion of any such gift, legacy, or bequest, but shall utterly lose the same, and be utterly barred thereof, as if no such legacy, gift, or bequest, had been given unto him, her, or them, by this my last will and testament (any thing before in these presents mentioned or contained to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding).

"Item, I give and bequeath to Richard Sutton, one of my executors before named, the sum of one hundred pounds; and to Mrs. Law over and besides the legacy before to her given, I give the sum of forty pounds to make her a gown withal.

"Item, I give to Master Hutton, the vicar of Littlebury, twenty pounds. To the town of Camps Castle, where I dwell, to be distributed amongst the poor of the same parish, ten pounds.

"Also to the poor of the town of Elcomb, to be equally distributed amongst them, the sum of ten pounds.

"Item, I give and bequeath those my mannors of Littlebury and Hadstock, in the county of Essex, to the Right Honourable the Lord Thomas Howard, Earl of Suffolk, and to his heirs for ever, upon condition that he do well and truly pay, or cause to be paid to my executors before named, or to the survivor of them, the sum of ten thousand pounds of lawful money of England, within one year next after my decease. And if he shall refuse to pay the said sum of ten thousand pounds for the said mannors, then I give and bequeath the said mannors of Littlebury and Hadstock to my said executors, and to their heirs for ever. And then I will and devise that the said mannors of Littlebury and Hadstock shall be sold by my said executors, or the survivor of them, to the uttermost price and value that they may be sold for, and the money coming of the sale thereof, together with as much more as shall make up the same sum, the full sum of twenty thousand pounds, I will, shall be imployed and bestowed by my said executors, or the survivor of them, with the advice of my supervisors aforenamed, in some good works and charitable uses for mine intended hospital, and for poor people, or otherwise as they in their wisdoms and discretions shall think fit.

"Item, I give to Mr. Flud, parson of Newington, the sum of thirteen pounds, six shillings, eight-pence. And to the wife of Benjamin King, of Southminster, six pounds, thirteen shillings, four-pence.

"Item, I give to Thomas Averell, if it shall be found that he

hath dealt faithfully and plainly with me in my business, the sum of ten pounds, which he oweth me.

"Item, I give unto the wife of Mr. Ingry, of Littlebury, three pounds, six shillings, eight-pence.

"Item, I give to Sir Henry Hubberd, Knight, the King's Majesty's Attorney General, a piece of plate of the value of ten pounds: and to Mr. Locksmith, his clerk, the sum of ten pounds.

"Item, I give to the poor of the parish of Hackney, ten pounds.

"Item, I give to Bridget Law, the sum of ten pounds: and to the Lady Altham, daughter to Mr. Auditor Sutton, the sum of twenty pounds.

"Item, I give to Sir Edward Phillips, Master of the Rolls, a piece of plate of the value of twenty pounds: and to Sir James Altham, one of the Barons of the Exchequer, one piece of plate of the value of twenty pounds.

"Item, I give to my late wive's kinsman, Guy Godolphin, the sum of ten pounds.

"Item, I give to the Right Honourable, my very good Lord, the Earl of Suffolk, the sum of four hundred pounds. All the rest of my goods, chattels, and debts, not before given and disposed, I give and bequeath to my intended hospital, to be imployed and bestowed on and about the same, according to the discretion of the feoffees of my said hospital, or the greater part of them. In witness hereof, I have hereunto set my hand and seal, the twenty-eighth day of the month of November above-written.

"THOMAS SUTTON.

"Memorandum, that the same testator did acknowledge that his will, written and contained in these three and twenty leaves, to be his last will and testament, and that his hand and seal set thereunto, is his own hand and seal, and that he had heard it read, and was acquainted with the contents of it, the said twenty-eighth of November above-written, in presence of us, John Law, Leonard Houghton, Alexander Longworth, Thomas Hall, the mark of Richard Pearce, the mark of Thomas Johnson, primo Decembris 1611. idem recognitum per testatorem coram Jo. Crooke quarto Decembris 1611. recognit. to be the testator's last will. Before me Henry Thoresby."

A Codicil to be annexed to the last Will and Testament of Thomas Sutton, Esquire, made and declared the day whereon he died, being the twelfth of December, one thousand six hundred and eleven.

"Item, he gave and bequeathed to Mr. Judge Crooke, one of the Judges of the King's-Bench at Westminster, the sum of ten pounds. And to Mr. Henry Thoresby, one of the Masters of the Court of Chancery, the like sum of ten pounds: and to Mrs. Sutton, of London, widow, the sum of three pounds, six shillings, eight-pence, to make her a ring.

"Also he gave to Mr. Hutton, clerk and vicar of Littlebury, the advowson or next presentation to the parsonage of Dunsby, in the county of Lincoln.

"Also he did then publish and declare before Mr. Richard Flud, parson of Stoke-Newington, in the county of Middlesex, Robert Petit, Alexander Longworth, John Parsons, and Thomas Johnson, his cook, that he had made his will, and thereof had made and ordained Richard Sutton, of London, Esquire, and John Law, his executors."

Mr. Sutton's death followed speedily on the making of his will. Up to the last day of his life his thoughts were constantly taken up with arrangements for his intended hospital, which, it is said, he hoped to govern as the first master. This hope, however, was not to be realised, for on the 12th December 1611 he died at the ripe age of 79, in his house at Hackney. According to a custom prevalent in those days the body of the dead man was embalmed at a cost of £40. 4*s*. 8*d*. The body, wrapped in lead but not placed in a coffin, was deposited first at Christ Church in Newgate Street, until the vault in the chapel at Charterhouse could be prepared. The funeral service was held in Christ Church, and was preceded by what was called a "collation." The procession was formed as follows: a hundred old men

in black cloaks walked before the corpse: the chief mourner was Simon Baxter, son of Sutton's sister, his nearest relative; then followed Lord Suffolk, Sir Francis Popham, the Governors of Sutton's Hospital and a vast number of other persons, which has been estimated at 6000. After the funeral service a "magnificent repast" was supplied at Stationers' Hall, which was hung with black cloth for the occasion. The bill of fare has been preserved, and runs thus: 32 neat's tongues, 40 stone of beef, 24 marrow bones and a lamb, 48 capons, 32 geese, 4 pheasants, 12 pheasant pullets, 12 godowits, 24 rabbits, 6 hearnshaws, 48 turkey chickens, 48 roasted chickens, 18 house pigeons, 72 field pigeons, 36 quails, 48 ducklings, 160 eggs, 3 salmon, 4 congars, 10 turbots, 2 dories, 24 lobsters, 4 mullets, a firkin and keg of sturgeon and 3 barrels of pickled oysters, 16 gammons of bacon and 4 of Westphalia, 16 dried tongues, 16 chicken pies, 16 pasties, 16 made dishes of rice, 16 neat's tongue pies, 16 custards, 16 dishes of leach, 16 quince pies, 16 orange pies, 16 forst-back meats, 16 gooseberry tarts, 8 redeare pies, 6 dishes of white leach, 6 grand salads, &c.* While this splendid table was provided for the wealthier acquaintance of the deceased Founder, the poor were not forgotten, and a distribution of alms was made in the

* The receipt for making "redeare" pie is not to be found: the following extract from "The True Gentlewoman's Delight" [1676] explains the mystery of "leach." "Make your jelly for your leach with calves-feet, as you do your ordinary jelly, but a little stiffer, and when it is cold take off the top and bottom, and set it over the fire with some cinnamon and sugar, then take your turnsels, being well steept in sack, and crush it and so strain it in your leach and let it boil to such a thickness, that, when it is cold, you may slice it."

parishes here named: to the poor of each of the parishes of St. Bride and St. Botolph (Bishopsgate), £5: to each of the parishes of St. Faith, Christ Church, St. Giles (Cripplegate), St. Botolph (Aldersgate), and St. Sepulchre £3: to each of the parishes of Allhallows the Great, St. Andrew by the Wardrobe, and St. Botolph (Aldgate), £2: in all £31.

So Thomas Sutton passed away from the world: he left behind him a princely fortune, and he tried in bequeathing it, as he had tried in using it, to promote, as far as in him lay, the good of all with whom he had been brought into contact, regarding himself only as the steward and dispenser of the wealth which had been entrusted to his care. The great foundations which at this day perpetuate the memory of his bounty and his judgment are witnesses to the character of one whose name "men will not willingly let die."

SCHOOL-ROOM, BUILT IN 1612. (GOWN-BOYS' DORMITORIES ABOVE). p. 89.

CHAPTER III.

Der Mensch denkt,
Gott lenkt.

THE first assembly of the Governors of Sutton's Hospital was holden on the day appointed for the funeral of the Founder. All but two of those who were namod in the letters patent followed his body to the grave. Lord Salisbury and Sir Thomas Foster had vacated their places by death. Their successors, elected at this first assembly, were the Earl of Northampton* and Sir James Altham.† The Governors appointed as their registrar Thomas Heyward, who had been Mr. Sutton's legal adviser. The place of their assembly was the Founder's house at Hackney, and before they left it they had already taken the first steps towards the fulfilment of his intentions. It will be seen by various passages in the documents already quoted that Mr. Sutton was occasionally disquieted by dread of some interference with the execution of his will—and such fears were not altogether groundless. Very soon after the Founder's death, Simon Baxter, his nephew, claimed the whole of the estate left for the maintenance of the Hospital. He made a petition to the King begging that his uncle's

* Henry Howard, created Earl of Northampton 1603.
† One of the Barons of the Exchequer.

will might be set aside: the case was argued before the highest legal authorities, and judgment was ultimately given against Mr. Baxter. The Lord Chancellor (Ellesmere) agreed in opinion with the judges. There is however a significant illustration of the character of the times in the fact that this judgment was not obtained without "a sacrifice to the higher powers." "This," says Mr. Smythe, "was offered to his Majesty, and received by him in a very delicate way." The letters written on this subject will supply the reader with an opportunity of giving his own verdict on the case. Opinions may possibly differ in regard to the delicacy of the whole transaction: but the Governors of Sutton's Hospital evidently thought that some such sacrifice offered them the best chance of escaping spoliation. Otherwise the strange proposal made to the executors, which is, in plain language, neither more nor less than the tender of a bribe to the King, would hardly have borne the signature of such a man as Launcelot Andrews, "whose praise is in all the churches." In the minutes of the Governors the letter stands thus:—

To Mr. Sutton's Executors.

"After our hearty commendations, whereas Thomas Sutton of Campes-Castle, in the county of Cambridge, Esquire, by his last will and testament, bearing date the second day of November, in the year of our Lord God, one thousand six hundred and eleven, did give and bequeath those his mannors of Littlebury and Hadstock, in the county of Essex, to the Right Hon. the Lord Thomas Howard, Earl of Suffolk, and to his heirs for-ever, upon condition that he did well, and truly pay, or cause to be paid to his executors, or to the survivor of them, the sum of ten thousand pounds of lawful money of England, within one year next after his decease; and if the said Earl should refuse to pay the said sum of ten thousand pounds for the said mannors; then the said Mr. Sutton did give and bequeath the said mannors to his

executors, and to their heirs for-ever. And the said Mr. Sutton did then further will and devise, that the said mannors of Littlebury and Hadstock should be sold by his executors, or the survivor of them, to the uttermost price and value that they might be sold for, and the money coming of the sale thereof, together with as much more as should make up the same sum the full sum of twenty thousand pounds, the said Mr. Sutton willed, should be employed, and bestowed by his executors, or the survivor of them, with the advice of his supervisors, in some good works or charitable uses for his intended hospital, and for poor people, or otherwise as they in their wisdoms and discretion should think fit. We being the overseers of the said Mr. Sutton's last will and testament, and desiring nothing more than the performance thereof according to his true intent and meaning; having advisedly considered that there is not any charitable work (in our understandings) better for the common wealth, than the upholding, maintaining, and repairing of bridges, whereby his Majesty's subjects, and all persons whatsoever, out of all parts of his Highness's realms of England and Scotland, may daily travel, and commerce one with another. And we being given to understand that Berwick Bridge upon the river of Tweed, which is the chiefest passage between both kingdoms, is very much ruinated, or rather utterly decayed, and will cost a very great sum of money (which as the necessity of the times is, cannot otherwise well be spared to repay it). Do therefore (as well in performance of the will of the said Mr. Sutton; as also in regard, his Majesty most graciously hath been pleased to further the establishing and settling of his hospital) advise and wish you, being Mr. Sutton's executors, to pay unto his Majesty into the receipt of his Highness's exchequer, the sum of ten thousand pounds, parcel of the said twenty thousand pounds remaining in your hands, and power to dispose of, towards the repairing of the said Berwick Bridge, which we doubt not his Majesty will graciously accept, and will besides redound greatly to the benefit of both kingdoms: and even so we bid you heartily farewell.

"Your very loving friends,

"Lambeth the 26th of June 1613.

"G. Cant.

"La. Elien." *

---

* George Abbot, Archbishop of Canterbury. Launcelot Andrews, Bishop of Ely.

On the 8th day of July following, the executors received this letter under the Privy Seal from his Majesty:—

"James, by the Grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c. To our trusty and well beloved Richard Sutton, Esquire, and John Lawe, Gent., executors of the last will and testament of Thomas Sutton, Esquire, late of Balsham, in the county of Cambridge, deceased, greeting.

"Whereas the said Thomas Sutton, by his last will and testament, bearing date the second day of November, in the year of our Lord God 1611, did will, that twenty thousand pounds should be imployed, or bestowed by you his executors, or the survivor of you, with the advice of his supervisors, in good works or charitable uses for his intended hospital, and poor people, or otherwise, as you in your discretion shall think fit. And whereas the Right Reverend Father in God, George, Arch-bishop of Canterbury, and the Revered Father in God, Lancelot, Bishop of Ely, supervisors of the last will and testament of the said Thomas Sutton, in part of performance of the said last will of the said Thomas Sutton in that behalf, have advised you his said executors to pay unto us into the receipt of our exchequer, the sum of ten thousand pounds, parcel of the said sum of twenty thousand pounds towards the repairing of the bridge of our town of Berwick-upon-Tweed, being very much ruinated and decayed, which said sum of ten thousand pounds, as we are given to understand, you are ready to pay unto us for the use aforesaid. We hereby let you witt, that we are well pleased to accept thereof accordingly, therefore hereby acknowledge our-selves satisfied and paid the said sum of ten thousand pounds, and do acquit and discharge you, and either of you, and your, and either of your heirs and executors of and for the same, and every part thereof. Given under our privy seal, at our palace of Westminster, the 8th day of July, in the eleventh year of our reign of England, France, and Ireland, and of Scotland the forty-six."

And the tally for the receipt of that sum was stricken at the Exchequer the 16th of July following.

The true character of this transaction is made clear by

a consideration of the dates connected with its progress. The letter written by the Archbishop of Canterbury and the Bishop of Ely bears date June 26th: on the 1st of July appeared the Chancellor's decree in which the petition of Simon Baxter was refused: the receipt for the sum of £10,000 was given by the Treasury on the 8th of July, and moreover the amount of the gift is quoted among "sums of money extraordinarily raised since the coming of his Majesty to the crown." Few in these days would be disposed to deny that such a method of raising money was extraordinary: nor can it be reasonably doubted that this "benevolence" had some effect in foiling the attempt to invalidate the Founder's will. Baxter's design, indeed, was altogether a failure: it brought him neither fortune nor good reputation. One of its earliest results was his exclusion from the legacy intended for him. The bequest made in his favour * was withheld by the surviving executor on the ground that he had by his conduct much "dampnified the Hospital." In consequence of this refusal the unfortunate suitor presented a petition to the Archbishop of Canterbury, in which he begged that the executor might be ordered to pay the said legacy of £300. In this document he admitted that "seduced by wicked councel and being an unlearned man he was contented (to his now great grief) to yield his consent that his name should be used to bring an action against the Hospital." His petition found favour, and the Archbishop gave an order that the legacy should be paid according to the

* See Sutton's Will, p. 76.

terms of the will. This sum of £300 was not the only advantage which Baxter derived from his uncle's estate. Mr. Sutton also possessed the manor of Tarbocke and the impropriate rectory of Huyton, in Lancashire. This property he had purchased shortly before his death for the sum of £9500. But it was not included in the disposition of his wealth, and Baxter, being the heir at law, had a claim to it. It did not, however, remain long in his hands; for he sold it to Sir R. Molyneux in 1615 for the sum of £10,500.* It was strongly suspected that this design of Baxter was prompted, and it was certainly aided, by no less a person than Sir Francis Bacon: whether this suspicion is justified or not, it is at least well known that the great philosopher proved a very powerful enemy of Sutton's proposed Hospital, and used his best endeavours to defeat the intention of the Founder. There were, moreover, still about the court some who had not yet given up the scheme propounded by Sir John Harrington. If they could but secure to his Majesty or to some member of the King's family the inheritance of Sutton's splendid fortune, a rich reward would be the consequence of such devotion: for it is quite clear that King James was not very scrupulous in regard to the sources from which "benevolences" were supplied to his exchequer. Sir F. Bacon's opposition to the Foundation is made to rest on grounds of public policy, and he sets forth his case with remarkable power; but there is unfortunately good reason for supposing that the "wisest, brightest, meanest of mankind" was

* This property now belongs to the Earl of Derby: Knowsley Park is in the parish of Huyton.

not altogether disinterested in the opposition he offered to the completion of Sutton's proposed Foundation. If an opinion on this matter rested only on the words of the letter, it might perhaps be claimed on behalf of Sir F. Bacon that his objections were prompted by nothing but anxiety to promote the public good: but this plea is weakened if not entirely set aside by the fact that, after all his eloquent abuse of the intended Hospital, he consented to take part in its administration, and was elected a governor in June 1619, a position which he continued to hold until his disgrace in 1621. The letter addressed by him to the King is valuable for several reasons; it is therefore given at length here:—

"May it please your Majesty,

"I find it a positive precept in the old law, that there should be no sacrifice without salt: the moral whereof (besides the ceremony) may be, that God is not pleased with the body of a good intention, except it be seasoned with that spiritual wisdom and judgment, as it be not easily subject to be corrupted and perverted. For salt in the Scripture is both a figure of wisdom, and lasting: this cometh into my mind, upon this act of Mr. Sutton, which seemeth to me as a sacrifice without salt; having the materials of a good intention, but not powdred with any such ordinances and institutions, as may preserve the same from turning corrupt; or at least from becoming unsavory, and of little use: for though the choice of the feoffees be of the best, yet neither can they always live; and the very nature of the work itself, in the vast and unfit proportion thereof, is apt to provoke a mis-employment: it is no diligence of theirs (except there be a digression from that model) that can excuse it from running the same way, that gifts of the like condition have heretofore done: for to design the Charter-house a building fit for a prince's habitation, for an hospital, is all one, as if one should give in alms, a rich embroidered cloak to a beggar: and certainly a man may see, tanquam quæ oculis cernuntur, that if such an edifice,

with six thousand pounds revenue, be erected into one hospital, it will in a small time degenerate, to be made a preferment of some great person to be master, and he to take all the sweet and the poor to be stinted, and take but the crums; as it comes to pass in divers hospitals of this realm, which have but the names of hospitals, and are but wealthy benefices, in respect of the mastership; but the poor, which is the propter quid, little relieved: and the like hath been the fortune of much of the alms of the Roman religion, in the great foundations, which being begun in vain-glory and ostentation, have had their judgment upon them to end in corruption and abuse. This mediation hath made me presume to write these few lines to your Majesty, being no better than good wishes, which your Majesty's great wisdom may make something, or nothing of.

"Wherein I desire to be thus understood, that if this Foundation (such as it is) be perfect and good in law; then I am too well acquainted with your Majesty's disposition to advise any course of power or profit, which is not grounded upon a right.

"Nay further, if the defects be such, as a court of equity may remedy and cure: then I wish that, as St. Peter's shadow did cure diseases, so the very shadow of a good intention may cure the defects of that nature: but if there be a right, and birth-right planted in the heir, and not remediable by courts of equity, and that right be submitted to your Majesty, whereby it is both in your power and grace what to do; then do I wish that this rude mass and chaos of a good deed, were directed rather to a solid merit, and durable charity, then to a blaze of glory, that will but crackle a little in talk, and quickly extinguish: and this may be done, observing the species of Mr. Sutton's intent, though varying in individuo: for it appears that he had in notion, a triple good, an hospital, a school, and maintaining of a preacher; which individuals refer to those three general heads, relief of the poor, advancement of learning, and propagation of religion. Now then, if I set before your Majesty, in every of these three kinds, what it is that is most wanting in your kingdom, and what is like to be the most fruitful and effectual use of such a beneficence, and least like to be perverted; that I think, shall be no ill scope of my labour, how meanly soever performed; for out of variety represented election may be best grounded.

"Concerning the relief of the poor; I hold, some number of hospitals, and with competent endowments, will do far more good than one hospital of an exorbitant greatness; for though

the one course will be more seen, yet the other will be more felt: for if your Majesty erected many, besides the observing of the ordinary maxim, 'bonum, quo communius, eo melius,' choice may be made of those towns and places, where there is most need; and so the remedy may be distributed as the disease is dispersed. Again, greatness of relief accumulated in one place, doth rather invite a swarm and surcharge of poor, than relieve those that are naturally bred in that place; like to ill-temper'd medicines, that draw more humour to the part, than they evacuate from it: but chiefly I rely upon the reason I touched in the beginning, that in these great hospitals, the revenues will draw the use, and not the use the revenues; and so through the mass of wealth, they will swiftly tumble down into a mis-employment. And if any man say, that in the two hospitals in London, there is a precedent of greatness concurring with good employment; let him consider, that those hospitals have annual governors; that they are under the superior care and policy of such a state as the city of London; and chiefly, that their revenues consist not in certainties, but in casualties and free gifts, which gifts would be with-held, if they appeared once to be perverted; so as it keepeth them in a continual good behaviour and awe, to imploy them aright: none of which points do match with the present case.

"The next consideration may be, whether this intended hospital, as it hath a more ample endowment than other hospitals have, should not likewise work upon a better subject than other poor; as that it should be converted to the relief of maimed soldiers, decayed merchants, housholders, aged and destitute churchmen, and the like; whose condition being of a better sort than loose people and beggars, deserveth both a more liberal stipend and allowance, and some proper place of relief not intermingled or coupled with the basest sort of poor; which project, though specious, yet in my judgment will not answer the design in the event, in these our times; for certainly, few men in any vocation, who have been somebody, and bear a mind somewhat according to conscience, and remembrance of that they have been, will ever condescend to that condition, as to profess to live upon alms, and to become a corporation of declar'd beggars; but rather will choose to live obscurely, and, as it were, to hide themselves with some private friends. So that the end of such an institution will be, that it will make the place a receptacle of the worst, idlest, and most dissolute persons of every profession, and to become a cell of loyterers, cast serving men, and drunkards, with scandal,

rather than fruit to the common-wealth: and of this kind, I can find but one example with us, which is the Alms-Knights of Windsor, which particular would give a man small encouragement to follow that precedent.

"Therefore the best effect of hospitals, is to make the kingdom, if it were possible, capable of that law, that there be no beggar in Israel; for it is that kind of people that is a burden, an eye-sore, a scandal, and a seed of peril and tumult in the state. But chiefly it were to be wisht, that such a beneficence towards the relief of the poor, were so bestowed, as not only the meer and naked poor should be sustained; but also that the honest person, which maketh hard means to live, upon whom the poor are now charged, should be in some sort relieved; for that were a work generally acceptable to the kingdom, if the publick hand of alms might spare the private hand of tax; and therefore, of all other imployments of that kind, I commend most houses of relief and correction; which are mixt hospitals, where the impotent person is relieved, and the sturdy beggar buckled to work; and the unable person also not maintained to be idle (which is ever joined with drunkenness and impurity) but is sorted with such work as he can manage and perform; and when the uses are not distinguish't, as in other hospitals, whereof some are for aged and impotent, some for children, and some for correction and vagabonds, but are general and promiscuous; so that they may take off poor of every sort from the country, as the country breeds them: and thus the poor themselves shall find the provision, and other people the sweetness of the abatement of the tax.

"Now if it be objected, that houses of correction in all places have not done the good expected; as it cannot be denied but in most places they have done much good; so it must be remembred that there is a great difference between that which is done by the distracted government of justices of peace, and that which may be done by a settled ordinance subject to a regular visitation, as this may be; and besides the want hath been commonly in houses of correction of a competent and certain stock for the materials of labour, which in this case may be likewise supply'd.

"Concerning the advancement of learning, I do subscribe to the opinion of one of the wisest and greatest men of your kingdom, that for grammar schools there are already too many, and therefore no providence to add, where there is excess. For the great number of schools which are in your Highnesses realm, doth cause a want, and likewise an overthrow; both of them

inconvenient, and one of them dangerous; for by means thereof they find want in the country and towns, both of servants for husbandry, and apprentices for trade; and on the other side, there being more scholars bred than the state can prefer and imploy, and the active part of that life not bearing a proportion to the preparative, it must needs fall out, that many persons will be bred unfit for other vocations, and unprofitable for that in which they were bred up, which fills the realm full of indigent, idle, and wanton people, which are but 'materia rerum novarum.'

"Therefore, in this point, I wish Mr. Sutton's intention were exalted a degree, that, that which he meant for teachers of children, your Majesty should make for teachers of men; wherein it hath been my ancient opinion and observation, that in the Universities of this realm (which I take to be the best endowed in Europe) there is nothing more wanting towards the flourishing state of learning, than the honourable and plentiful salaries of readers in arts and professions; in which point as your Majesty's bounty already hath made a beginning, so this occasion is offered of God to make a proceeding; surely, readers in the chair, are as parents in sciences, and deserve to enjoy a condition not inferior to their children, who embrace the practical part, else no man will sit longer in their chair, than till he can walk to a better preferment: and it will come to pass, as Virgil saith,

'Et patrum invalidi referent jejunia nati.'

For if the principal readers, through the meanness of their entertainment, be but men of superficial learning, and that they shall take their places but in passage, it will make the mass of sciences want the chief and solid dimension, which is depth, and to become but pretty and compendious habits of practice. Therefore I could wish that in both the Universities, the lectures, as well of the three professions, divinity, law, and physick; as of the three heads of science, philosophy, arts of speech, and the mathematicks, were raised to £100 per annum a-piece; which though it be not near so great as they are in some other places, where the greatness of the reward doth whistle for the ablest men out of all foreign parts to supply the chair; yet it may be a portion to content a worthy and able man, if he be likewise contemplative in nature, as those spirits are, that are fittest for lectures: thus may learning in your kingdom be advanced to a further height; learning (I say) which

under your Majesty, the most learned of kings, may claim some degree of elevation.

"Concerning propagation of religion, I shall in few words set before your Majesty three propositions; none of them devices of my own, otherwise than that I ever approved them; two of which have been in agitation of speech, and the third acted.

"The first is a colledge for controversies, whereby we shall not still proceed single, but shall, as it were, double our files; which certainly will be found in the encounter.

"The second is a receipt (I like not the word seminary, in respect of the vain vows, and implicite obedience, and other things tending to the perturbation of states involved in that term) for converts to the reformed religion, either of youth, or otherwise: for I doubt not, but there are in Spain, Italy, and other countries of the Papists, many whose hearts are touch'd with a sense of those corruptions, and an acknowledgement of a better way; which grace is many times smothered and choaked, through a worldly consideration of necessity and want; men not knowing where to have succour and refuge: this likewise I hold a work of great piety, and of great consequence; that we also may be wise in our generation, and that the watchful and silent night be used as well for sowing good seed, as of tares.

"The third is, the imitation of a memorable and religious act of Queen Elizabeth, who finding a part of Lancashire to be extremely backward in religion; and the benefices swallowed up in impropriations, did by decree in the dutchy erect four stipends of £100 per annum a-piece for preachers well chosen to help the harvest, who have done a great deal of good in the parts they have laboured: neither do there want other corners in the realm, that would require for a time the like extraordinary help.

"Thus have I briefly delivered unto your Majesty my opinion touching the employment of this charity, whereby that mass of wealth, which was in the owner little better than a stack or heap of muck, may be spread over your kingdom, to many fruitful purposes, your Majesty planting and watering, and God giving the increase."

It must be borne in mind that at the time when this letter was written the validity of Sutton's will had not yet been confirmed, and also that Sir F. Bacon was the

counsel employed by Baxter for the prosecution of his suit. It is certainly unfair to apply the standard of modern opinion to the actions of men who lived 250 years ago, but, if this be freely admitted, there yet remains something very remarkable in the act of addressing such a letter to the King on the subject of a suit still pending; for the King in those days could exercise considerable influence on the decisions of the law courts, and it is needless to remark that no sovereign of the House of Stuart had any hesitation in employing such influence. The arguments of the letter no doubt gained some weight by the adroit suggestion made in it that the whole estate might possibly be placed at his Majesty's disposal; and we can hardly wonder that when those who desired to further the Founder's intention were opposed by arts like this, their "benevolence" towards his Majesty was sensibly quickened, and their solicitude for the safety of the bridge at Berwick-on-Tweed greatly increased. The issue of this conflict has been already described. By the failure of Sir F. Bacon's attempt to set aside Sutton's will, the plan of the Founder was confirmed, and the execution of its details was at once taken in hand by those who were the trustees of his fortune and intentions. The first assembly of Governors held at Charterhouse took place on the 30th of July 1613. On that occasion the meeting was composed of those whose names are here given, viz.:—

The Archbishop of Canterbury (Geo. Abbot).
The Lord Chancellor (Thomas, Lord Ellesmere).
The Bishop of London (John King).
The Bishop of Ely (Launcelot Andrews).
The Lord Privy Seal (Hy. Howard, K.G., Earl of Northampton).

The Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas (Sir Edward Coke).
Sir J. Altham (one of the Barons of the Exchequer).
The Attorney-General (Sir H. Hobart).
The Dean of Westminster (G. Montaigne).
The Dean of St. Paul's (J. Overall).
Sir Thomas Foster, Knight (one of the Barons of the Exchequer).
Henry Thoresby, Esq.
Richard Sutton, Esq.
Geoffrey Nightingale, Gent.
John Law, Gent.
The Master of the Hospital (Rev. John Hutton, M.A.).

The first care of the assembly was to survey the site intended for the Hospital, apportion it to the several purposes of the Foundation, and make such improvements and additions to the buildings as were required to make the place useful for the Founder's purpose. At this meeting they decided also on the conditions which should be considered sufficient to qualify candidates for admission to the Hospital, and in regard to the Pensioners or Poor Brethren they determined that they would have there "no rogues or common beggars, but such poor persons as could bring good testimony of their good behaviour and soundness in religion, and such as had been servants to the King's Majesty, either decrepid or old; captains either at sea or land; soldiers maimed or impotent; decayed merchants; men fallen into decay through shipwreck, casualty of fire, or such evil accident; those that had been captives under the Turks."* In

* Long before this unhappy nation was pronounced to be "unspeakable" by a modern statesman, its name was generically applied to all foreign kidnappers and marauders, especially to the pirates, by whom the merchant shipping in the 17th century suffered severely.

regard to the Poor Scholars to be admitted to the benefits of the Charity, they decided that no children should be placed there whose parents had any estate in land to leave them, but only the children of poor men that wanted means to bring them up. Having so far settled the principles on which the inmates of the house were to be selected, they proceeded further at the next meeting, November 13th 1613, to elect a Preacher, an Auditor and a Steward; they also chose as the first recipients of Sutton's bounty twenty-one Pensioners, but as the house was not yet ready for their reception, a provisional allowance of £5 for every quarter of a year was made to each of them. The first elected Pensioner was Capt. James Fenner, a military officer who had seen much service. It is probable that at this meeting the plan for the erection of the Founder's tomb was first discussed, but as no decision was taken on the subject, there is no minute of the discussion remaining. For the immediate discharge of any pressing business connected with the affairs of the Hospital a sub-committee was appointed, with power to take such action as they should judge fitting for the furtherance of the plan of the Governors. At the next assembly, holden December 10th 1613, the number of Pensioners was made up to eighty, and this number has remained fixed up to the present time. It was also determined that at their admission to the house they should receive £5 yearly in quarterly payments, and £15 in diet and other necessaries, beside physic, fuel and a chamber furnished. But, as in the case of those who had been previously elected, a payment in money was made provisionally for those who had been thus chosen. In the

meanwhile the preparation of the Hospital was rapidly making progress, and when the Governors met on July 19th 1614 they began to look forward to the early completion of their plans.

They then approved the design for the Founder's monument and gave orders for its erection in the place which it now occupies in the chapel of the Hospital. This monument is a very elaborate work in the style of the later renaissance. It is built mainly of alabaster, on which paint and gilding are profusely lavished. The work was not completed till the year 1615. The following receipt shewing the cost of it is still in existence:—

"Be it known unto all men that wee Nicholas Johnson, Edmund Kinesman and Nicholas Stone, citizens and freemasons of London, have received and had, this 24th daye of November 1615 anno xiii R. Jacobi, of Richard Sutton, esq. execut^r of the last will and testam^t of Thomas Sutton esq. deceased, in full payment of four hundreth pounds for the making fynishing guilding and putting up of a monument or tombe on the north side of the Chapell within the hospitall of King James founded in Charterhouse for the said Thomas Sutton, founder of the same hospitall, which toombe is in heighth xxv foote, and in bredthe xiii foote and is set out and garnished with dvse (divers) cullomes pedestalls capitalls pictures tables and arms of alablaster, touch, rance and other hard stone, wee finding all manner of stuff and workmanship according to an agreem^t in that behalf made, the sum of one hundreth poundes of lawfull money of England over and above three hundredth poundes of like lawfull money by us formerly received of the said Richard Sutton. In witness whereof we have hereunto set our hands and seals the day and year aforesaid.

"Nicholas Johnson,
"Edmund Kinesman,
"Nicholas Stone."

This meeting was further marked by the election of 35 scholars. Among these earliest Gown-Boys was Joseph Henshaw, who afterwards became famous as a divine and was ultimately consecrated Bishop of Peterborough. At the same meeting it was further determined that the members of the Hospital already appointed should begin to take up their residence after Michaelmas Day. The Bishop of London was desired in the meantime to choose with great care a Schoolmaster and an Usher. These officers appear to have entered on the active exercise of their duties October 3rd 1614.* This, therefore, may be regarded as the date on which the work of the School was begun. The selection of the Bishop of London was confirmed at an assembly held on December 3rd 1614: on that day Nicholas Gray was appointed Schoolmaster and Henry Bagley was appointed Usher: at the same meeting the number of scholars was made up to 40: and this number was generally maintained for many years, but there seem to have been occasional instances in which it was exceeded.† The orders recorded in the Assembly Book from time to time bear conclusive evidence of the care bestowed on the government of the Hospital, a care which was extended even to the most minute particulars: for example, there is an order which regulates "the Sonday dynner to seaven persons at the Master's table‡ and theire attendants: viz. a joynte of mutton, veale or porke xx*d.* roast beefe ii*s.* vi*d.* and a capon or

* MS. note in Brooke Hall Book.

† See Notices of Schoolmasters, Dr. Russell and Dr. Saunders.

‡ At this table the officers of the Hospital dined.

some other dishe of ii*s.*, in all vi*s.* viii*d.*" The broad cloth of which the scholars' gowns were to be made was to cost 9*s.* 6*d.* per yard: the gowns were to be lined with baize at 2*s.* 4*d.* per yard, and 2*s.* 4*d.* was to be allowed for making. These quotations are important, because they shew the labour and pains bestowed on every detail of the administration of the Hospital.

Towards the end of the year in which the Foundation had been put into working order by the Governors, the body of the Founder was laid within the walls of his Hospital. On December 12th 1614 it was conveyed from Christ Church, Newgate Street, by torchlight, on the shoulders of Pensioners, to its last resting-place. The vault in which it lies has been opened on one or two occasions. The remains of Peter Hooker, Master (1615), of Francis Beaumont, Master (1617), of Thomas Burnet, Master (1685), and of John King, Master (1715), were laid in the same grave with Thomas Sutton. It was opened in 1818 to receive the remains of Lord Ellenborough, Lord Chief Justice of England, who, "in grateful remembrance of the advantages he had derived through life from his education on the foundation of Charterhouse," desired that his body should be buried in the chapel. The words just quoted are taken from the inscription on a monument designed by Chantrey, and fixed on the south wall of the chapel. On the slab is carved a sitting figure of Lord Ellenborough, wearing the robes of his office. Once again, in 1842, the vault was opened in the course of some repairs done to the fabric. The leaden case in which the body of the Founder was enclosed was found to be in a

perfect state of preservation after the lapse of nearly 240 years.

From the whole history of Charterhouse it is evident that the School from its first foundation was a place of liberal education, that is, that it was intended not merely to give that kind of instruction which can be appraised at a value in money, but so to developo the mental powers of the boy that they may be applied with the best advantage to any circumstances in which the man may be placed. From its earliest days boys were sent both from the Foundation and from the School generally to the Universities. The work of the School began, as we have already seen, in October 1614, and on the 13th of October 1617 an Exhibition of £20 annually during pleasure was voted to Crofts, who was the first scholar sent from Charterhouse to the University of Cambridge. In 1630 there were at the Universities 27 exhibitioners from the foundation of Charterhouse at an annual charge of £432 to the house: and it is fair to presume that there were sent from the School many other students who had not been educated at the cost of the Hospital. It is not indeed quite clear at what date the Schoolmaster began to take other boys into the School to be educated with the Gown-Boys; it is probable that this practice was allowed by the earliest regulations, for in the statutes promulgated in 1627 these "other" scholars are spoken of as a recognised part of the School, and it is well known that among them was Sir Richard Lovelace, who was a Charterhouse boy, but not on the Foundation, in the year above-named. The statutes of 1627 mentioned above were generally

known as the "Old Establishment." They were framed in compliance with an application made by the Governors to the Parliament for the confirmation of the Foundation. The application was made as early as 1621: for in that year a panic had been created among corporate institutions owing to the action of the Parliament, and it is said that no less than eighteen hospitals were about that time impeached in regard to the soundness of their foundations.* It is stated by Mr. Malcolm and others after him that between the years 1617 and 1624 the Hospital lost £8000; but there is no record of this loss in the minutes of the assemblies, nor can it be proved by any evidence now attainable.

During several years in the early part of the 17th century great sickness prevailed in London. In 1625 more than 35,000 persons died of the plague which then raged in the city. In 1636 occurred another serious outbreak of disease. On this occasion the gates of the Hospital were jealously guarded; all who were not on the Foundation were excluded from Charterhouse; and the possibility of the removal of the whole of the inmates to some place of safety was seriously discussed. But ultimately this extreme measure was found to be unnecessary, and after a short interval the work of the School was resumed.

A more protracted trouble was hard at hand. The relations between King Charles and his Parliament rapidly passed from bad to worse, and Charterhouse did not escape the consequences of this struggle. By the civil war which

* Parliamentary History, v. 339.

broke out in 1642 the Hospital was seriously affected. When the Parliamentary cause was triumphant, some of the Governors were deprived of the positions which they held in Church and State, some were expelled from the government of the Foundation, and some resigned. In 1643 the Parliament forcibly interfered with the constitution by which the Hospital was regulated: for on the 5th of September in that year it was ordered "that the Master of Sutton's Hospital do admit Mr. Foxley, a minister, into the place of preacher, lecturer and reader for that Hospital; and that he receive the profits belonging to the said places and accustomably paid and the profits belonging to the organist."* This was succeeded on 18th September by an order "that a sequestration be brought in for the sequestering of the minister's and preacher's and organist's place of the Charterhouse; and that the Master of the Charterhouse do permit such as the House shall appoint to execute the said places: and that the receiver do pay the profits belonging to the said places to such as this House shall appoint to receive the same." And this again was speedily supplemented by an order, 7th October 1643, "for sequestering the rents and profits of the preacher's and organist's place of Sutton's Hospital, in the county of Middlesex, whereof Daniel Tutivell was late preacher, to the use of Thos. Foxley, an orthodox divine, who is hereby required and appointed to preach every Lord's Day there, and to take care for the discharge of the cure of that place, and to receive the profits thereof and of the organist's place

* Commons' Journal, iii. 229; ibid, iii. 244; ibid, iii. 266.

until further order shall be taken by the House, was this day read, and by vote upon the question assented unto."

About this time Mr. Brooke was ejected from the office of Schoolmaster: a detailed account of this ejection is given elsewhere.* But these were not the only misfortunes which befel the Foundation. The consequences of the war were severely felt. Not only was there a rapid rise in the price of the necessaries of life, but the receipts of the Hospital were simultaneously diminished. Its income is derived entirely from land, and the heavy imposts laid on the tenants by the Government caused great difficulty in the payment of rent; while on the other hand the available labour of the country was largely withdrawn from agriculture, and farmers were impoverished and discouraged by the ruin and seizure of their crops. As the result of this calamity the receipts of the Hospital were found in 1645 to fall below the expenditure by £1500, and great efforts were required to meet the emergency. The daily provision of food was reduced; the Pensioners' allowances were curtailed; all festivals except only that of Founder's Day were abolished, and a percentage was taken off all salaries. But the Hospital survived the disorders and privations of those terrible days. Its government, however, was so grievously dislocated that the attention of Parliament was turned in 1650 to its internal condition. On the 17th of April in that year an order was issued that "such of the present Governors of Sutton's Hospitall who have subscribed the engagement or the major part of them doe

* See Notices of Schoolmasters, Mr. Brooke.

proceed in all the business of the Hospitall untill the Parliament take further order."* At that time the names of the leading men of the Parliamentary party appear on the lists of the Governors of Charterhouse; among them that of the Captain-general of the Forces, Oliver Cromwell. He attended six assemblies of the Governors between October 1651 and July 1653, but his signature is not to be found in the Order Book. Soon after the latter date he resigned the office of a Governor, and was replaced by Major-General Philip Skippon.

By the restoration of the King all the provisions made by the Parliament for Charterhouse were at once overthrown. Those who had taken part against the Crown were replaced by loyal adherents of the Sovereign: and it will be seen from the list of Governors given later that several of those who had been ejected in the days of Cromwell once more resumed their charge of the Hospital. During the reign of Charles II. the course of the Hospital's existence ran smoothly enough, and there remains no record of any disturbance of its peace. For many years it enjoyed such prosperity as furnishes but small material for history. The even tenour of its peaceful life was broken by a tyrannical attempt made by James II. to interfere with the rights and privileges of the Governors. The King was anxious at every opportunity which offered itself to forward his design of restoring Romanism in England. He had recently attempted to compel the University of Cambridge to grant the degree of M.A. to a Benedictine monk and to

* Commons' Journal, iii. 400.

force a president of his own nomination on Magdalen College, Oxford; but the most respectful yet most determined opposition was offered by the Universities to the King's invasion of their rights. In the same spirit he tried to coerce the Governors of Charterhouse into the election of a Papist nominee: but here too he was unsuccessful. His Majesty called upon the Governors to admit Andrew Popham to be a Pensioner in Sutton's Hospital "without tendering any oath or oathes unto the sayd Andrew Popham or requiring of him any subscription, recognition or other act or acts in conformity to the doctrine and discipline of the Church of England, as the same is now established and notwithstanding any statute, order or constitution of or in the sayd Hospitall with which His Majesty was pleased to dispense." The Governors of Charterhouse, however, thought the Act of Parliament under which they were constituted and the directions of the Founder's will were of more importance than the arbitrary mandate of the King. A stormy discussion followed the reading of His Majesty's letter. Lord Jeffreys was present at the meeting, and in his usual way supported the King's order. But Dr. Burnet,* the Master, the aged Duke of Ormond and some others were faithful to their trust, and in spite of the opposition of the adherents of the court, the Earl of Middleton, who was the bearer of the royal letter, was desired on the part of the assembly "to represent in the most humble manner to His Majesty that wee apprehend ourselves to be soe tyed up and to lye under soe strict obligations

* See Notices of Masters, Dr. Burnet.

that wee are not at liberty to comply with what is required from us."*

It does not appear that any further action was taken upon this refusal. Probably the King and Jeffreys had other claims on their care; and possibly the Duke of Ormond and some other Governors of the Hospital could not be so safely bullied as the divines of the Universities.

For 260 years from the date of the Foundation the Governing Body, constituted according to the same rule, controlled both parts of the Hospital, viz., the Asylum for aged men and the School for the education of boys. Though their duties were admirably performed, and their position and character were such as to ensure conscientious attention to the best interests of the whole Foundation, yet it was thought expedient by the legislature (Public Schools Act, 1868) to form a separate body for the government of the School. The composition of this new Governing Body is described in its proper place. A list printed at the end of the book gives the names of all those who were Governors of the whole of Sutton's Hospital from 1611 to 1871.

* Lord Macaulay (chap. viii.) gives a graphic account of this scene, but his statement that no formal reply was made to the royal mandate is at variance with the entry in the Order Book of the assembly.

CHAPTER IV.

THE MASTERS OF CHARTERHOUSE.

Οἶκου κήδεσθαι καὶ κτήματα πάντα φυλάσσειν.
HOMER, *Od.* xix. 22.

THUS far we have traced the history of Sutton's Hospital from the time when the plan of it was matured by the Founder till the eve of the Revolution of 1688. The earliest part of its existence fell on evil days. But after all the "changes and chances" which befel it in the 17th century it was finally established as one of the great and permanent Foundations of the country. This result bears testimony to the wisdom of the judgment by which the Founder refrained from laying down a body of statutes, never thereafter to be altered or amended, and contented himself with entrusting the maintenance and regulation of his charitable purpose to a number of men who were recommended by their worth and their position. To this arrangement he added the condition that each vacancy in the Governing Body should as it occurred be filled up by an election made by the survivors. There is, indeed, some indication that he proposed to limit the nomination to those who filled certain definite positions, but the Governors have for many years exercised a free choice in their election to vacancies, and there can be no

doubt that this freedom has proved advantageous to the Trust. The care which has been bestowed on the estate derived from the Founder by the Governors of Charterhouse in every age, and the pains taken in the distribution of the income of the Hospital, furnish a testimony which cannot be gainsaid. Though the history of a Foundation devoted to the purposes of Sutton's Hospital is almost of necessity destitute of stirring interest for the general reader, yet the work done by Charterhouse in the care and maintenance of the aged, and still more in the instruction and training of those who were yet to serve God in their generation, quiet and unobtrusive though it be, is beyond all doubt a work which has contributed largely to the welfare of the community and to the prosperity and happiness of many families. It is the object of this summary to set forth, with as much brevity as is consistent with clearness, the manner in which that work was done; and this object will probably be best secured if, after the payment of due tribute to the services of the Governors, we pass to a review of those whose charge it has been to conduct the domestic business of the Hospital and to control from day to day the details of its management. The office of the Master of the Hospital supplies the link which joins together these two bodies. He is at once a Governor and an officer of the Institution. He has a voice in the deliberations on which its general laws are founded, and on him rests the responsibility of its daily supervision. The following list gives the names of those who from time to time have held the distinguished office of the Master of Charterhouse, and in the case of each there is

added so much information as was to be derived from available sources:—

Masters of the Hospital from the date of the Foundation to the present time.

1. Rev. John Hutton, M.A., 1611.
2. Rev. Andrew Perne, M.A., 1614.
3. Rev. Peter Hooker, B.D., 1615.
4. Francis Beaumont, Esq., 1617.
5. Rev. Sir Robert Dallington, M.A., 1624.
6. George Garrard, Esq., M.A., 1637.
7. Edward Cressett, Esq., 1650.
8. Sir Ralph Sydenham, 1660.
9. Martin Clifford, Esq., 1671.
10. Hon. William Erskine, 1677.
11. Rev. Thomas Burnet, B.D., 1685.
12. Rev. John King, D.D., 1715.
13. Nicholas Mann, Esq., 1737.
14. Rev. Philip Bearcroft, D.D., 1753.
15. Rev. Samuel Salter, D.D., 1761.
16. Rev. William Ramsden, D.D., 1778.
17. Rev. Philip Fisher, D.D., 1804.
18. Ven. Archdeacon Hale, M.A., 1842.
19. Rev. George Currey, D.D., 1872.

1. John Hutton (1611–1614) was an intimate friend and adviser of the Founder, by whom he was nominated for the Mastership. This office he resigned, after a short tenure of three years, for the vicarage of Dunsby, which was in the gift of the Governors; it being understood by them to be the wish of the Founder that Mr. Hutton

should succeed to the earliest benefice which should be at their disposal.

2. Andrew Perne (1614–1615) remained in office only a few months: he was the son or near relative of a Master of Peterhouse of the same name. The elder Andrew Perne was well known to Mr. Sutton.* According to the Order Book of the Governors Mr. Perne resigned the Mastership of Charterhouse in order to discharge the duties of proctor at Cambridge. He was afterwards presented by the Governors to the vicarage of Southminster in Essex.

3. Peter Hooker (1615–1617) was Master for less than two years. The short period of his tenure offers nothing worthy of record. His body was buried in the Founder's vault within the Charterhouse.

4. Francis Beaumont (1617–1624) was a younger son of Nicholas Beaumont of Cole-Orton, Esq., who represented the county of Leicester in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, and was the ancestor of Sir George Beaumont the present owner of Cole-Orton. The appointment of Mr. Beaumont was made "by the King." This seems to be the only instance in which the election of a Master was not made by the Governors of the Hospital: nor can it be readily explained how the nomination

* See p. 26, note. Dr. Perne was notorious for the facility with which he adapted his religious views to the exigencies of the times. While he was Master of Peterhouse he caused his initials, A. P., to be attached to a new weathercock placed by his order on the college. His enemies gave four different interpretations to these letters, viz., Andrew Perne; A Papist; A Protestant; A Puritan. Probably he was not the first or the last type of the Vicar of Bray.

passed out of their hands on this occasion. It appears from the records of Charterhouse that Mr. Hooker's funeral took place on September 14th 1617, and the Order Book shews that an assembly was held on the 13th of October of the same year. This was clearly the proper occasion for the election of a successor to the Mastership; and it is not easy to guess why the election was not then made. But no recorded notice was taken of the vacancy, and the right of appointment lapsed to the Sovereign. During Mr. Beaumont's tenure of office application was made to the Parliament for the confirmation of the Hospital.* It is also recorded that in this same period the Foundation was impoverished by the loss of £8000, but no account is given of the cause of this misfortune. It could hardly have been due to any neglect or fault of the Master, for he died leaving a good name. There is still in the possession of the Hospital a large silver basin, of plain workmanship and very beautiful design, which is occasionally used in Brooke Hall. It bears the name of Francis Beaumont, and was given by him to Charterhouse in 1620. After a Mastership of seven years' duration Mr. Beaumont died in Charterhouse. His body was buried in the Founder's vault, and his memory is recorded in the chapel by a small monument in the style of the renaissance.

5. Sir Robert Dallington (1624–1637) had been a scholar of Pembroke College, Cambridge. After leaving the University he took deacon's orders, and for a time kept a school in Norfolk. Having saved some money he retired from the work of teaching, and spent several

* See p. 108.

years in travelling over France and Italy. On his return he was appointed secretary to the Earl of Rutland. His leisure time was employed in a digest of the experience gained abroad, and he published in 1605 "A Survey of the great Duke's State in Tuscany, An. 1596," and shortly afterwards, "A Method for Travel, shewed by taking View of France as it stood in the Year 1598," and "Aphorismes, Civil and Military," from the first four books of Guicciardini's History. About the time of his appointment to the mastership he was made a knight. It is probable that he owed his election to the Prince of Wales (afterwards Charles I.), of whose council he was for some time a member, but the Governors seem to have considered that they were not fully justified in yielding to such pressure, for they thought it their duty to decide for themselves and their successors that anyone in the position of Sir R. Dallington should thereafter be disqualified for holding the office to which they elected him. They ordered that no future Master should be elected under 40 years of age, or who was not in holy orders of priesthood two years before his election. On his arrival at the Hospital he was welcomed with a speech in Latin verse, spoken by the head boy of the School, and probably written by the Schoolmaster, Dr. Gray. Fuller* thinks that Sir Robert would not have been pleased with the following reference to his former occupation:—

> Partem oneris vestri minimam ne despice, curam
> Nec pueros iterum tædeat esse tuam.
>
> "Do not the least part of your trust disdain,
> Nor grudge of boys to take the care again."

* Worthies, ii. 512.

In 1636 he had become very infirm, as his signature in the Order Book sufficiently proves, and he was assisted in the discharge of his office by two persons appointed by the Governors. He died in 1637, and was by his will a benefactor to his native town, Geddington, Northamptonshire, where he had during his lifetime built and endowed a free school. Wood* says that he was buried in the Founder's tomb, but in making this statement he appears to be in error.

6. George Garrard (1637–1650), who succeeded Sir R. Dallington, was elected in direct opposition to the law laid down at his predecessor's appointment. He was not in holy orders, but he appears to have fully satisfied the other part of the regulation, for after discharging his office for 13 years he resigned it through age, and retired on a pension of £80 per annum. Mr. Garrard's tenure of the mastership was no sinecure. It extended over all the troubled days of the civil war of 1642, and during those times the Hospital was often put to great straits, as well by diminution of its revenues as by arbitrary interference with its constitution, and the Master must often have been sorely tried in the performance of his duties to those whom he governed and to those who governed him.

7. Edward Cressett (1650–1660) was the successor of George Garrard. He was promoted from the position of Registrar to that of Master. The decision respecting holy orders was, as a matter of course, neglected at this time; and indeed it does not seem to have been ever

* Fasti Oxon., 162.

regarded as important, for there was no attempt to return to it after the restoration of the King. In the year 1650 a Parliamentary order was issued respecting the state of the Hospital, and probably men's minds were at this time so far settled that a return to regularity was rendered possible. Mr. Cressett appears to have devoted his attention to an enquiry into the funds of the Hospital, for in January 1652 he made a report to the Governors on the Receiver's accounts, in which he sets forth various losses sustained by the Foundation "besides the sume of mcxiiii^{li}. (£1114) w^{ch} he alledgeth to be taken from him by theeves at the late Robbery committed in the said Hospital and besides some other smaller sumes otherwise lost." He resigned the office of Master at the Restoration, by a written document under his own hand and seal.

8. Sir Ralph Sydenham (1660–1671). There is no record of any importance referring to Sir R. Sydenham's tenure of office.

9. Martin Clifford (1671–1677) no doubt owed his election to the influence of George Villiers, Duke of Buckingham. He seems to have been closely connected with the family of Thomas, Lord Clifford, a member of the Cabal Administration. He had been educated at Westminster School, from which he passed on to Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1640, and would probably have distinguished himself there "had not the Wars hindred his Progress." He was an able man, of no small literary merit; for it is said* that he assisted the Duke in the

* Wood's Athenæ Oxon., ii. 804.

composition of "The Rehearsal," a comedy in which Dryden was vehemently attacked. The poet replied to "The Rehearsal" by the character of Zimri, in "Absalom and Achitophel." Mr. Clifford's associates in this composition, beside the Duke of Buckingham (if, indeed, he had any hand in it), were Dr. Sprat, chaplain to the Duke (afterwards Bishop of Rochester), and Samuel Butler ("Hudibras"). During the time of his mastership he published anonymously "A Treatise of Humane Reason" (1675). One or two months after its publication the Bishop of Ely (Dr. Laney) was dining in Charterhouse with many "persons of Quality," and the conversation during dinner turned on that book. The Bishop, no doubt unaware that he was in the presence of the writer of it, remarked that "'twas no matter if all the Copies were burnt and the author with them," "because it made every man's private Fancy judge of Religion."* The treatise was answered by "Observations on, &c." (1675), and this again drew forth a reply (1680) from some writer after Mr. Clifford's death, which took place in 1677. His body was buried in the chapel.

10. Mr. Clifford's successor was the Hon. Wm. Erskine (1677–1685), a younger son of John, ninth Earl of Mar. He held the appointment of cupbearer to King Charles II. Being a man of cultivated mind, with a taste for scientific pursuits, he was one of the earliest Fellows of the Royal Society, which was constituted by the King in 1663, "for improving Natural Knowledge."

* Wood's Athenæ Oxon., ii. 521.

11. The next Master, Thomas Burnet (1685–1715), was a man of deep research and much learning. He was born at Croft, in Yorkshire, in 1635, and proceeded in 1651 to Cambridge, where he took the degree of M.A. in 1658. His life was to a large extent devoted to philosophical enquiry, and he soon gained a great reputation for learning. He became Master of Charterhouse when he was in his fiftieth year: and in the course of his mastership he distinguished himself by the resistance he offered to an unconstitutional attempt of James II., who wished to intrude on the Foundation one Andrew Popham, a Roman Catholic. In this matter Burnet faced the tyrannical Jeffreys, then Lord Chancellor and one of the Governors, who attended the meeting of the Governors in order to promote the wish of the King. Burnet, who seems to have taken the lead in this opposition to the royal mandate, was supported by the Archbishop of Canterbury (Sancroft) and the Duke of Ormond, and his opposition proved successful. He enjoyed the good opinion of Archbishop Tillotson, on whose recommendation he was made secretary and chaplain to William III. But his chief title to reputation rests on his literary works. He was well known as a writer by the most learned men in Europe, and his discussions excited great interest among them. His most famous publication was entitled "Telluris Theoria Sacra:" it was printed at London in 1680, at Amsterdam in 1689, at Frankfort in 1699, and at Hamburg in 1726. It treats of the terrestrial revolutions which have been and which are yet to come. Addison thought so highly of this work that he wrote a Latin Alcaic Ode in praise of it. In the

following stanza he refers to the bold speculation of the author:—

> Tu, veritatem quærere pertinax,
> Ignota pandis, sollicitus parum
> Utcumque stet communo vulgi
> Arbitrium et popularis error.

The theories of the author were vigorously opposed, especially by the learned Dr. Keill. Buffon in a notice of the work speaks well of the literary ability and picturesque style of the writer, but not so well of his scientific power: "le raisonnement est petit et les preuves faibles et la confiance de l'auteur si grande, qu'il la fait perdre à ses lecteurs." By a later work, entitled "Archæologia philosophica, sive doctrina antiqua de rerum originibus" (1792), his orthodoxy was brought under suspicion, and the way to further promotion was barred. The treatise "De statu mortuorum et resurgentium" was a posthumous publication, and so was another work, "De fide et officiis Christianorum." These treatises were published in 1723. Burnet enjoyed the society of the leading men of his time in England. One of his intimate friends was Sir Godfrey Kneller, who painted a portrait of him. This portrait is among the very best of Sir Godfrey's works, and there can be no question about its merit. The subject of the painting was 62 years of age at the time. He is represented seated, with an open book before him, and wearing a grave and thoughtful look. There is a fine engraving of this picture by Faber. Dr. Burnet died at the age of 80 years. His remains were buried in the chapel.

12. In the mastership he was succeeded by John King

(1715–1737). Dr. King before his election had held the office of Preacher for 20 years.

13. Nicholas Mann's administration lasted 16 years (1737–1753), but there is no record of importance concerning him or his office. His body was buried in the cloister, and his memory is preserved by a square stone tablet placed immediately over the chapel door. The inscription is said to have been written by himself:—

Attendo paulum, quisquis es: subtus jacet

NICOLAUS MANN,

Olim magister, nunc remistus pulvere:
Quis ille vel quid egerit bene aut secus
In vita, omitte quæritare; scit Deus.
Monere voluit hoc, quod ad te pertinet:
Bene universis tu fac et fieri velis,
Semper benigni Patris omnium memor.
Sic si paratus huc intres, precibus tuis
Cœlum patebit; ipse quum stabis reus
Die suprema sub tremendo judice,
Ratione vitæ reddita laudaberis.

14. Philip Bearcroft (1753–1761) was for many years associated with Charterhouse. At the time when he was appointed Master he had already been Preacher for more than 29 years. His long acquaintance with the Foundation, which he had first known in his schooldays, eminently qualified him for the task of writing the history of the Hospital, a work which he brought to a conclusion in 1737. He bestowed great pains on the collection of his materials, and by his careful research he was enabled to correct several errors which had been made by Hearne, Heylin and others in the account of Mr. Sutton's life. His enquiries into points of detail were marked by much

sagacity; and the result of his labour is a valuable contribution to the history of Charterhouse. The collection of original documents given in this History is of great importance. The book is illustrated by three engravings representing (1) Mr. Sutton, (2) the Founder's tomb in the chapel, and (3) a bird's-eye view of Charterhouse as it was in 1737. In the preface to his work the writer states that he was strongly encouraged to undertake it by the Board of Governors.

15. Samuel Salter (1761–1778), like his predecessor, was preferred to the office of Master after having discharged the duties of Preacher, an appointment which he held for 7 years. It is probable that his connection with Charterhouse was due to the favour of Archbishop Secker, with whom he was connected by marriage. His degree of D.D. was conferred by the Archbishop. He was succeeded in his office by

16. William Ramsden (1778–1804), who before his appointment had been Usher for 30 years. He continued to hold the mastership for 26 years, and as he had in his youth been a scholar on the Foundation to which he was elected at a very early age, he had at the time of his death passed not less than 64 years on the Foundation. So long a connection with the Hospital has probably no parallel except in the case of Dr. Walker.* Dr. Ramsden's grave is in the chapel cloister.

17. Philip Fisher (1804–1842). Mr. Fisher was one of eight sons of Dr. Fisher, vicar of Peterborough and rector of Calbourn. At an early age he was removed

* See Notices of Schoolmasters, Dr. Walker.

from the Cathedral School of Peterborough to the Foundation of Charterhouse, where he was contemporary with Edward Law, known later as Lord Ellenborough. From Charterhouse he proceeded to University College, Oxford. He was in due time elected Fellow and Tutor of his college, where he became an intimate friend of the Scotts, afterwards Lords Stowell and Eldon. During his residence at Oxford he was appointed Proctor, and in the Latin Oration made at the close of his year of office he inveighed vehemently against those "delicati juvenes" who paraded the High Street in a garment, then considered to be a type of extravagant habits, viz., trowsers, which among the fast men of the University were gradually replacing the shorter habiliments. Mr. Fisher held the rectory of Elton, Northamptonshire, which is in the gift of University College, and the vicarage of Whaplode, Lincolnshire, to which he was nominated by Lord Eldon. To Lord Eldon's interest he owed a Prebendal Stall in Norwich Cathedral, and he was appointed also Precentor of Salisbury. This latter appointment was due to his elder brother, who had been Preceptor to the Princess Charlotte, and was elected (1) Bishop of Exeter and (2) Bishop of Salisbury. By the interest of the same brother he was appointed to the Mastership of Charterhouse. It seems difficult to imagine how all these duties could have been performed by one man. In our day, *οἷοι νῦν βροτοί εἰσιν*, the proper discharge of them would certainly be impossible. The degree of D.D. was conferred on Mr. Fisher by the Archbishop of Cantorbury The two brothers above named were not the only

members of the family who occupied distinguished positions. Two were generals in the army, and were commandants, one of the Woolwich, the other of the Portsmouth garrison. Another was a canon of Exeter Cathedral, and another was an eminent physician at Bath. The days in which Dr. Fisher lived were days of tranquil inactivity; and it is not strange that during his tenure of office as Master of Charterhouse he introduced but little change into the existing order of things. Such changes would probably have been alien from his own sentiments and repugnant to the feelings of the men among whom he lived. The reforms which were made in the management of the Hospital were certainly introduced in the latter days of Dr. Fisher's mastership. They date from the year 1823, and must in fairness be ascribed to the ability and energy of his successor. Dr. Fisher was an accomplished scholar, and was throughout his long life intimately associated with many of the most eminent men of his time. In his 87th year he composed for his grandson the Rustat Commemoration Speech which was delivered in the Hall of Jesus College for many successive years from 1837. He died at Kingston-on-Thames in January 1842, at the age of 92 years.

18. William Hale Hale (1842–1871) was Master for more than 30 years. Born in 1795, he entered the School in 1807, and was a boarder in the house of Dr. Raine. In 1813 he proceeded to Oriel College, Oxford, then at the height of its reputation. He took the degree of B.A. in 1817, having gained a Second Class in the Schools. After taking holy orders he became curate at St. Botolph's, Bishopsgate, Dr. Blomfield being at the time

rector of the parish. In 1823 he was appointed Preacher to the Charterhouse. On the preferment of Dr. Blomfield to the see of Chester (1828), Mr. Hale was selected as examining chaplain to the bishop. He continued to hold the same office under Dr. Blomfield, after his lordship's translation to the see of London (1834). Mr. Hale's election to the Preacher's office marked a new era in the history of Charterhouse. For many years before there had been throughout the charitable institutions of the country, and indeed generally in all matters of trust, a state of stagnant acquiescence in things as they were, and all attempts at advance or improvement or adaptation to altered circumstances were looked upon as revolutionary and dangerous. The precise observation of the letter of obsolete enactments had well nigh killed the creations of bygone times, but there was yet remaining in many of them the spirit which giveth life. The enquiry into public charities which was instituted by Lord Brougham, and the movement consequent upon it, awakened men's minds out of a state which to some appeared to be grateful contentment, to others supine lethargy. The spirit of reform was stirred throughout the kingdom, and Mr. Hale was its first exponent at Charterhouse. The School had indeed kept pace with the requirements of the times, and maintained its position abreast of kindred institutions: but that part of the Hospital which consisted of the Pensioners had fallen into a lamentable state of decay and wretchedness. It had indeed sunk so low as to present no better appearance than that of an undisciplined workhouse. At the time when Mr. Hale became Preacher, Dr. Fisher, the Master,

was already in his 71st year: he had been accustomed during a long life to the system which prevailed in the Hospital, and by the temper of his mind he was resolutely opposed to every project, however unimportant, which had in it the slightest savour of change. The deterioration of the house was not of sudden growth; it was the result of a century of neglect and self-satisfied complacency. The Master apparently considered the existing management to be perfect; therefore no small labour and courage and tact were required in the man who would find a remedy for the disorder which it shewed. But the new Preacher was equal to the work of cleansing this Augean stable; and the care and pains he bestowed on the task are deserving of the highest praise. Nearly simultaneous with the election of Mr. Hale to the Preacher's office was the appointment of Dr. Vetch to the place of Physician to the Hospital. In this worthy man Mr. Hale found a valuable coadjutor. Together they pursued the projected improvement so vigorously that as early as 1825 the work of re-building the Hospital was actually begun, and while this work was in progress the Preacher was maturing a plan for maintaining better government in the house, and for the introduction of cleanliness and order into a place where neglect and dirt had reigned alone. It is a significant fact that none of the officials of the Foundation lived "down Charterhouse" at this time. The Preacher's house was in Charterhouse Square, and when the occupant of the office proposed that a residence should be built for him in the new quadrangle the proposal was regarded by his friends with undisguised astonishment. But he rightly concluded

that the neighbourhood of an important officer of the house would at once provide a check for many of the prevailing disorders and abuses, and in the year 1828 the Governors decided, on the application of Mr. Hale, that the Preacher's abode should be fixed in the centre of Charterhouse. Under the same auspices the whole of the medical department of the Hospital was speedily reformed; the sick received careful attention; nurses were appointed to wait on the brethren and to keep their rooms in order; drunkenness and immorality were distinctly discouraged; and the whole place soon began to wear a different aspect. About the same time a matron was appointed to superintend the nurses, and to have a general supervision of the domestic comforts of the Pensioners. In the labour of securing these advantages the Physician cordially took part with the Preacher. At length in 1832, on the death of the Manciple, a thorough investigation of the expenditure of the Hospital was instituted. The enquiry extended over six months; it was conducted with great care, and during the whole time Sir Robert Peel lent his able assistance to its vigorous prosecution. The result of this examination was that the domestic arrangements of the Hospital were remodelled throughout, and placed on a most satisfactory footing. These reforms placed on the Pensioners an unwonted degree of restraint, and they expressed their dissatisfaction by a petition to the Governors, in which they complained of unfair treatment, and asked for an increase of their annual stipend. The former part of their petition was judged, after careful examination, to rest on no foundation, and in answer to the latter part of

it they received an addition of £2 per annum for each Pensioner. According to the original order of 1627 ("the Old Establishment"*), each Poor Brother received £5 yearly by way of stipend, and £1. 6*s.* 8*d.* for Beavors.† This allowance had been increased by the addition of £3 in 1735, of £4 in 1783, of £6 in 1813, and of £2 in 1835, so that the stipend amounted to £20 in the year last named, and in the item for Beavors had also been raised to £6. 10*s.* per annum. A reasonable supply of coal and candles was assigned to each Pensioner, and a liberal dietary was provided. During the latter years of Dr. Fisher's life his advanced age prevented him from taking an active part in the control of the Hospital. This deficiency was ably supplied by the Preacher, who at length in 1842 succeeded to the mastership. His election to the chief place gave him a better opportunity for the pursuance of his plans for the amelioration of the arrangements of the Hospital; and he continued with unabated care the good work in which he had been already engaged for many years. In a society constituted as that of the Poor Brothers of Charterhouse is, there will be always found some discontented spirits: but perhaps there were good grounds for the petition presented by the Pensioners to the Governors in the year 1853. In this document they ask for an increase of their annual stipend and set forth reasons why it should be granted. The substance of their complaint was that, whereas the Master's income had been multiplied sixteenfold from

* See p. 108.

† Occasional refreshment. The word is still in use in some provinces of England.

the establishment of the Hospital (viz. from £50 to £800) the Poor Brothers' income had been only augmented to four times the original stipend (viz. from £6. 6*s*. 8*d*. to £26. 10*s*.). This complaint of the Pensioners was made also to the Charity Commissioners, and it ended in a decision of the Governors by which the stipend was increased to £36 per annum. During the whole time of his tenure the Master continued with the same assiduity with which he had begun to maintain the Hospital in a wholesome condition. In the above remarks the chief stress has been laid on the improvements introduced among the Pensioners, for that was the part of the Hospital in which such reforms were most urgently needed: but the Master did not fail to pay similar attention to the domestic condition of the Gown-Boys, and he introduced from time to time many regulations and changes of arrangement which, small in themselves, contributed very largely to the well-being of the boys. As late as 1860 the house in which the Foundation Scholars were lodged was greatly improved by the addition of new buildings and additional accommodation, and many a Carthusian who was in "Gown-Boys" between 1842 and 1871 will remember the lively interest he took in that portion of the School. Regarding the Foundation Boys and the Pensioners as inseparable parts of the same institution* he offered a decided and powerful resistance to the project of removing the School to its present site. In contradistinction to the proposed removal† he entertained the idea that so far as the non-Foundationers were

* Public Schools Commission, vol. ii. pp. 211–217; vol. iv. p. 48.
† Ibid, vol. iv. p. 53.

concerned Charterhouse should be made to occupy the position of a large day school for London: and no doubt if the School had been retained on its ancient site there was much to be said in favour of such a scheme: but the opposition to the removal was overruled by a large majority of the Governors, who preferred to accept the recommendation* of the Royal Commissioners and choose a fit site for the School at some distance from the metropolis. For the sake of maintaining continuity of narrative the chief points of interest in the history of Archdeacon Hale's mastership have been given as above. He was, however, well known outside the walls of the Foundation in which so many years of life and labour were spent by him. He was appointed successively (1) to the archdeaconry of St. Albans, (2) to the archdeaconry of Middlesex, and (3) to the archdeaconry of London. By this latter appointment he became a canon of St. Paul's Cathedral. At one time he held the vicarage of Cripplegate, which is in the gift of the Dean and Chapter of the Metropolitan Church. For 55 years he was a Governor of Christ's Hospital, and for a large part of this time he served on the committee of that Foundation. He was an able preacher, a diligent student of antiquity and a man of high social culture. His death occurred December 1871, and his body was buried in a vault under St. Paul's. A monument has been erected to his memory in the chapel cloister at Charterhouse.

19. George Currey—the present Master of Charter-

* Public Schools Commission, vol. i. p. 184.

house—was elected to the office in January 1872. He was born April 17th 1816 in Charterhouse Square, his father, the Rev. James Currey, being at that time Preacher to the Hospital. He entered the School at the age of 7½ years in 1824 and left it in 1834, the first part of his school life having been passed under Dr. Russell, the latter under Dr. Saunders. After gaining the highest distinctions open to him at Charterhouse, he proceeded to St. John's College, Cambridge, and in his first year of residence he gained the Bell Scholarship. This distinction he shared with Mr. May, now Lord Chief Justice of Ireland. At the final examinations he was placed 14th among the wranglers and 4th in the 1st class; the three who were above him were the late Lord Lyttelton, the present Master of the Temple (Dr. Vaughan), and the present Lord Chief Justice of Ireland. Shortly after he had taken his degree Mr. Currey was elected Fellow, and later he was appointed Tutor of St. John's. In 1848 he was made Preacher to Charterhouse: and in 1850 Hulsean Lecturer at Cambridge. Though in accordance with the new statutes the Master of the Hospital is no longer a Governor of the School ex-officio, Dr. Currey is a member of the Governing Body by the vote of the Governors of Charterhouse, and happily the tie which unites him closely to the School of which he is so distinguished alumnus remains unbroken. Dr. Currey is also a Governor of St. Paul's School. He was made prebendary of St. Paul's in 1875. He has long been an active member of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, of the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge and of the Clergy Orphan Schools.

CHAPTER V.

THE SCHOOLMASTERS OF CHARTERHOUSE.

Quod munus reipublicæ afferre majus meliusve possumus, quam si docemus atque erudimus juventutem?

CICERO, *de Div.*, ii. 4.

The good or ill bringing up of children doth as much serve to the good or ill service of God our Prince and our whole countrie, as any one thing doth beside.

R. ASCHAM'S *Scholemaster*, Book i.

THE care exercised by the Governors in the administration of the Hospital is shewn generally by their selection of officers, but it will be freely admitted that the choice of a Schoolmaster imposed on that body a most serious task, for though the School was only a part of Sutton's great Foundation, yet if it be considered what important issues depend on the results of its work, how whole lives are affected by the associations of early years, it will be allowed that the appointment of a master of any school is no light matter. The list of the Schoolmasters of Charterhouse seems to furnish a proof that the Governors were fully aware of the responsibility which lay upon them, and that they discharged their duty according to their power. The roll of those who have served the Foundation in this office is given below. In justification of the remarks above made, some information about the

Schoolmasters is added in every case where it was attainable. Those whose names are marked thus (*) were educated on the Foundation of Charterhouse, as Gown-Boys, or Poor Scholars. Those who were educated at Charterhouse but not on the Foundation are marked thus (†). Those who had previously filled the office of Usher are distinguished thus (‡) :—

1. Nicholas Gray, D.D., 1614.
2. ‡Robert Gray, M.A., 1624.
3. ‡William Middleton, M.A., 1626.
4. *‡Robert Brooke, M.A., 1628.
5. *‡Samuel Wilson, M.A., 1643.
6. *John Boncle, M.A., 1651.
7. *‡Norris Wood, M.A., 1654.
8. *‡Thomas Watson, M.A., 1662.
9. *‡Thomas Walker, LL.D., 1679.
10. *‡Andrew Tooke, LL.D., 1728.
11. *‡James Hotchkis, D.D., 1731.
12. *Lewis Crusius, D.D., 1748.
13. *Samuel Berdmore, D.D., 1769.
14. *Matthew Raine, D.D., 1791.
15. *John Russell, D.D., 1811.
16. †Augustus Page Saunders, D.D., 1832.
17. †Edward Elder, D.D., 1853.
18. ††‡Richard Elwyn, M.A., 1858.
19. William Haig Brown, LL.D., 1863.

It will be seen by the list here given that for many years the Schoolmaster was chosen from among those who had been educated on the Foundation of Charter-

house, and that for nearly 100 years (1654–1748) on the occurrence of a vacancy the Usher for the time being was invariably promoted to the chief control of the School. Though indeed the School has always supplied a succession of learned men fully competent for the discharge of so important a duty, yet these restrictions on the free choice of a master—for by prescription they had become restrictions—were not in accordance with the liberal mind of the Founder. It may also be doubted whether they tended to promote the good of the School, for though the traditional history of an old Foundation preserves much that is valuable and worthy of affectionate care, yet it is also true that tradition may serve to rivet on ancient institutions much that is neither wholesome nor admirable, and it is therefore well that the customs and habits of a long-established school should occasionally be subjected to the judgment of one who was not trained in the midst of them, and who can bring to bear on the appreciation of them a mind not trammelled by the impressions of early youth. The second of the above-named restrictions has long since been abandoned: it was set aside in the election of Dr. Crusius, and since that time Mr. Elwyn has been the only Schoolmaster who before his election had been Usher; but no one will be disposed to think that his appointment to the Head Mastership rested on any claim of prescription. The other restriction was abandoned in the instance of Dr. Saunders. For 180 years the Head Master of the School had been educated on the Foundation of Charterhouse. Dr. Saunders and the two Masters who immediately succeeded him were educated in the School, but not on

the Foundation. In 1863 it was decided, chiefly at the instance of Archbishop Longley and the Bishop of London (now Archbishop of Canterbury), that the choice of the Governors should not be fettered by precedent, but that they should be free to select any of the candidates who offered themselves for the vacancy.

The list of Schoolmasters, however, would be incomplete, and an opportunity of recording here some whose names are held dear by Carthusians would be lost, if the names of those who have filled the office of Usher were not given. They are as follows: the date of election is added to each:—

1. Henry Bagley, 1614.
2. *Robert Gray, 1619.
3. *William Middleton, 1624.
4. *Robert Brooke, 1626.
5. Anthony Andrews, 1628.
6. John Byrch, 1631.
7. *Samuel Wilson, 1637.
8. John Martyn, 1643.
9. *Norris Wood, 1643.
10. John Stephens, 1648.
11. Edmund Sly, 1650.
12. *Thomas Watson, 1656.
13. Rowland Buckeridge, 1664.
14. *Thomas Walker, 1674.
15. William Bolton, 1679.
16. John Stacey, 1685.
17. *Andrew Tooke, 1695.
18. John Gough, 1728.

* Afterwards Head Master.

19. *James Hotchkis, 1731.
20. Kornick Prescott, 1731.
21. Samuel Patrick, 1736.
22. William Ramsden, 1748.
23. William Bird, 1778.
24. Edward Wollaston, 1791.
25. John Stewart, 1804.
26. Robert Watkinson, 1811.
27. William Herbert Chapman, 1827.
28. Oliver Walford, 1838.
29. *Richard Elwyn, 1855.
30. Frederick Poynder, 1858–1872.

On the retirement of Mr. Poynder the office of Usher was abolished.†

1. The Schoolmaster selected by the Bishop of London in compliance with the request of the Governors made at the assembly of July 19th 1614, was Nicholas Gray. The choice of the Bishop was confirmed by Mr. Gray's election at the assembly December 3rd 1614: but he was probably at work earlier than this date, for there is a record that the School was opened October 3rd 1614. Mr. Gray was born in London in 1590, and educated at Westminster School. From Westminster he passed to Christ Church in 1606. Eight years later he was appointed Schoolmaster of Charterhouse. This office he filled for 10 years, when he became "uncapable of the place" by reason of his marriage; the statutes at that

* Afterwards Head Master. † See Statutes, p. 19.

time requiring all the officers of the Hospital to be single men. In the records of the assemblies of the Governors it is stated that in consequence of the good service done by Mr. Gray, they intended to elect him to the first vacant benefice, and in pursuance of this resolution he was afterwards preferred to the rectory of Castle Camps, in Cambridgeshire, but the date of his appointment is not recorded. Soon after his relinquishment of office at Charterhouse he was chosen head master of Merchant Taylors' School, and he began his work there in 1625, but not without some difficulty in taking possession, for the head master to whom he had been appointed a successor refused to retire from his situation, and was not persuaded to leave Mr. Gray in undisturbed possession till he had received the sum of £130. At Merchant Taylors' Mr. Gray still maintained the reputation he had won at Charterhouse, so that in 1641 he was appointed head master of Eton, where he was welcomed as a schoolmaster of tried abilities and success in teaching. He was afterwards elected a Fellow of Eton College. Gray was a zealous Royalist, and paid the penalty of his opinions, for under the Parliamentary rule he was ejected from his living and his fellowship, "whereby he was put to difficult shifts, and with much ado rub'd on for some years." In 1647 he became head master of Tonbridge School, where he remained 10 years. Doubtless his advanced age, for he was now 67 years old, determined his resignation of this work. After the Restoration Gray was re-elected a Fellow of Eton College at the recommendation of King Charles II. It is interesting to notice that another distinguished

Carthusian, Dr. Isaac Barrow, was made a Fellow of the College at the same time. Gray, however, did not live long after his return to Eton. He died there in October 1660, and his body was buried in the chapel "near to the stairs that go up to the organ loft." Among Dr. Gray's pupils at Charterhouse were Sir Richard Lovelace and Bishop Henshaw. His literary works were (1) a Dictionary, Eng.-Lat. and Lat.-Eng.; (2) "Parabola Evangelica, Latine reddita," and some minor works.*

2—3. Robert Gray and William Middleton must be passed over without much personal notice. Of the former nothing is recorded but that he was a brother of Nicholas Gray, above mentioned, and that he was for five years an efficient Master of the School. William Middleton was Head Master for less than two years. He resigned on his appointment to the office of Preacher, and was in 1630 preferred to the rectory of Cold Norton, a living in the gift of the Governors of Charterhouse. The following accounts of books supplied for the use of the School during the years 1625 and 1626 are still preserved. They are interesting chiefly because they convey some idea of the work done by boys at that time.

"24. Martii 1625.

"Rec. of John Clarke Receaver for teaching the boys to write and for bookes this Christmas quarter, ending the day above written, as followeth:

---

* Wood's Athenæ Oxonienses, ii. 252. Wilson's History of Merchant Taylors' School. Rivington's History of Tonbridge School. Eton Register.

	£	s.	d.	li.	s.	d.
1 Isocrates interlineat	0	4	6			
2 Grammat.	0	1	10			
1 Gallateus de moribus	0	0	10			
6 Pallatinatus Catechism	0	2	0			
1 Lubini paraphra. (paraphrasis) in Horatium	0	5	0			
6 Camdeni Grammat. Gr.	0	6	6	03	17	02
1 Apollinar. in Psalmos	0	1	0			
1 Scaliger et pater—novm test.	0	3	0			
1 Ream of paper	0	5	6			
1 Quire of Gilt paper	0	0	10			
Inke and Pennes	0	2	2			
Teaching to write	2	0	0			
For binding the Hall Biblo	0	4	0			

"ROBERT GRAY."

"xxi die Septembr. 1626.

	£	s.	d.
6 Prayers for y^e^ fast	0	3	6
1 Farnab. Martial	0	1	6
Item Lexicon fo. 2 volls. bound	0	6	0
1 Featlyes Parrabel	0	1	10
1 Downe's Demosthenes	0	1	4
2 Ovid Metamorph.	0	1	8
3 Virgilii	0	4	0
Item a Demosth.	0	1	0
1 Erasmi Colloquia	0	1	8
4 Theogn.	0	6	8
2 Grammars	0	1	10
4 Ciceron. orat. 3 voll.	0	4	0
1 more	0	6	0
2 Bond Horat.	0	3	0
4 Virgilii	0	4	4
2 Plaut.	0	3	4
1 Homer Iliad	0	5	4
9 Isocrat.	0	18	0
1 more	0	2	0
6 Grammars	0	1	6
3 Isocrat.	0	5	6
1 Ovidii Epist.	0	4	6
1 Berchot Catech.	0	0	10

6 Homer's Il. Grec.	...	...	...	0	2	0
1 Demosthenes	...	...	...	0	10	0
1 Paper Booke	...	...	...	0	1	4
3 Homer Iliad	...	...	...	0	4	0

"Received by mee William Midleton of Mr. Clarke Receiver the sum of £5. 7*s.* 10*d.* for bookes for the use of the School I say received."

The sum of the above account is £5. 6*s.* 8*d.*, and one or two of the items are difficult to understand.

4. Robert Brooke was a staunch Royalist. Not only did he espouse the cause of the King, but it is said that he flogged some of his boys who had expressed approval of the Parliamentary cause. This was a strong measure, especially if it be taken into account that he was, according to the testimony of Crashaw, very sparing in the use of the rod. So dangerous a "malignant" could not be allowed to hold office in Charterhouse, and Mr. Brooke was accordingly removed from his charge in 1643. He lived, however, to see the restoration of the Stuarts, and in 1660 he returned to Charterhouse, but not as Schoolmaster. The Governors assigned for his use two chambers in the chapel cloister, and a pension of £30 per annum. The pension, however, was to be paid not by the Governors but by the successor of Mr. Brooke. The apartment given for his use was for many years known as Mr. Brooke's lodgings. Some years afterwards the partition which separated the two chambers was removed, and the room thus made was called in memory of the old Schoolmaster "Brooke Hall." This was for many years used as a common-room by the officers of Charterhouse, and its name is still preserved and given to the

Masters' common-room in the new buildings. Among Mr. Brooke's pupils was Richard Crashaw, the poet above named, who cherished a most affectionate recollection of his former master. There are extant in Crashaw's works two short Latin poems addressed to Mr. Brooke. One of them opens with these lines, in which he playfully rebukes the mildness of his old schoolmaster:—

"O mihi qui nunquam nomen non dulce fuisti,
Tunc quoque cum domini fronte timendus eras:
Ille ego pars vestri quondam intactissima regni
De nullo virgæ nota labore tuæ:
Do tibi, quod de te per sæcula longa queretur,
Quod de me nimium non metuendus eras." &c.

Crashaw was not the only distinguished pupil of Mr. Brooke. Dr. Isaac Barrow was also among his boys.

5. Samuel Wilson was Schoolmaster for 8 years. No other record of him remains.

6. John Boncle was tutor to the children of Charles I. In later times he espoused the Parliamentary cause. It will be seen that he was Head Master of Charterhouse for only three years. In 1654 he was appointed head master of Eton, but he held that appointment only one year, and in 1655 he became a Fellow of the College. At the Restoration he was removed from his fellowship, in spite of his earnest petition to be retained in it. This petition was based on the facts that the writer had done good service as tutor to the children of King Charles and as Head Master first of Charterhouse and then of Eton. But his Puritan sympathies had been so decidedly manifested that the Royalist argument mentioned above was of little force. Boncle had probably been a pupil of

Nicholas Gray, and it will be seen from the remarks on the life of Gray that when Boncle was ejected from Eton College Gray was replaced in it. Mr. Boncle was appointed head master of the Mercers' School in 1660.

7—8. Of Norris Wood and Thomas Watson no record remains but that which is given in the dates above quoted: illacrymabiles Urgentur ignotique longa Nocte carent quia vate sacro.

9. Thomas Walker spent 54 years of his life in the discharge of the duties first of Usher, then of Schoolmaster, which latter office he held for nearly half a century. In the chapel a memorial tablet records his name and virtues. The inscription was written by Dr. Davies, of Queens' College, Cambridge, who was reputed to be the best Latin scholar of his day in England. Dr. Davies had been educated under Walker at Charterhouse. In this monumental record he describes his former master as a man of high character and extensive learning. "Hebraicam Græcam Latinamque linguam peraccurate tenuit, nec muneri suo fungendo magis fuit idoneus quam in cunctis partibus ejus implendis diligens et assiduus." Dr. Walker died June 12th 1728 in the 81st year of his age. Among his pupils were Richard Steele, Joseph Addison, Law (Bishop of Carlisle), Daniel Wray, Benson (Bishop of Gloucester), John Wesley, Dr. Davies (President of Queens' College, Cambridge).

10. His successor was Andrew Tooke. Mr. Tooke was a man of great learning and ability. He was the second son of Benjamin Tooke, citizen and stationer of London, and was born in 1673. From Charterhouse he passed to Clare College, Cambridge. He was elected

Usher of the School in 1695, and remained in that office for 33 years. During a great part of this time he was also Gresham Professor of Geometry. In 1729 he resigned his professorship that he might devote himself exclusively to his school work. He was F.R.S., and was the author of many learned and useful works. Perhaps the most famous of these was the "Pantheon," a summary of heathen mythology for the use of schools, which was so highly esteemed that it went through not less than twenty-two editions. It was written in the form of question and answer. The interlocutors are Palæophilus and Mystagogus. This is a specimen of their style:

PAL.—Who is that nasty old decrepid long-bearded fellow? or what is his name?

MYST.—He is the ferryman of hell. His name is Charon, which word denotes the ungracefulness of his aspect (Charon quasi Acharon, id est, sine gratiâ, ab *a* non et χαρις gratia).

His virtues and learning are recorded in a very long monumental inscription in the chapel. He lived 58 years.

11. James Hotchkis resigned after having held office for 17 years. He was rector of Brettenham, Suffolk, and of Balsham, Cambridgeshire. The latter benefice is in the gift of the Governors of Charterhouse: the former is in the gift of the Lord Chancellor. Among his best known pupils were Sir William Blackstone and William Jones of Nayland.

12. Lewis Crusius was of St. John's College, Cambridge. His book on the "Lives of the Roman Poets" is a work of labour and careful research: Latin scholarship has advanced since the time when it was written, and

though the book is a creditable performance for the days in which it was published, it would not now be considered a very valuable contribution to our knowledge of the subject on which it treats. Probably the best part of it is the Introduction to the Lives of the Dramatic Poets. Dr. Crusius died in 1775, six years after his resignation. Edward Law (Lord Ellenborough) was in the School in his time.

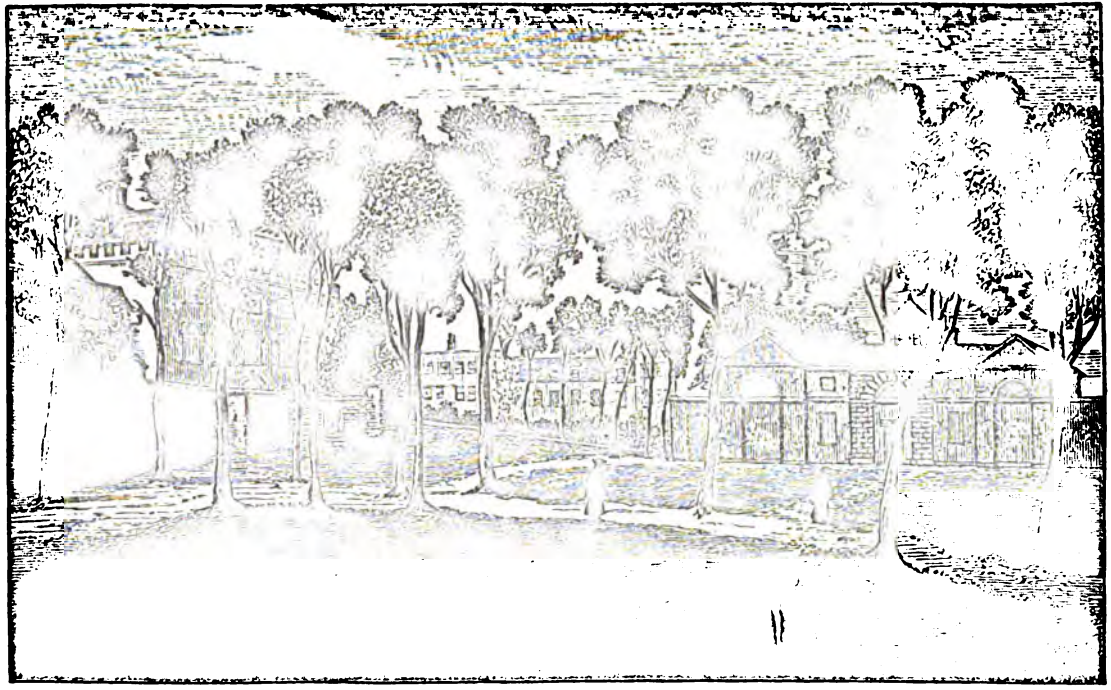
13. Samuel Berdmore was a Fellow of Jesus College, Cambridge. He was the author of a Latin essay which gained the Members' Prize at Cambridge in 1760. He resigned in 1791, and lived till January 1802. His death was the result of an accident which befel him on the preceding Founder's Day. The following extract from a song composed for Founder's Day by Mr. James Beresford contains an allusion to the death of his former schoolmaster. The lines are quoted not so much for their poetical merit as to shew the affectionate regard felt for the subject of them :—

Here sad remembrance bleeds afresh and clouds around us gather;
For Berdmore's gone and we are left still mourning for a father;
In life the friend, and oh in death the martyr of our meeting,
He came to bless his boys once more and died in the retreating.

In his epitaph on the chapel wall he is spoken of thus:

vixit pius, frugi, integer, benignus:
decessit magno bonorum maerore.

He numbered among his scholars C. Manners Sutton (Archbishop of Canterbury), T. Manners Sutton (Lord Manners, Lord Chancellor of Ireland), Law (Bishop of Bath and Wells), James (Bishop of Calcutta).



HEAD MASTER'S HOUSE. FRONT OF SCHOOL (BUILT IN 1803). p. 149.

14. Matthew Raine proceeded from Charterhouse to Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1778. In 1782 he was placed among the wranglers, and took his B.A. degree. In 1783 and 1784 he gained the Members' Prize for Latin Prose, and in 1784 he also became a Fellow of Trinity. He graduated in the same year with Professor Porson, and throughout his life he remained a friend and correspondent of the learned and witty professor of Greek, who was often a visitor at Charterhouse in Dr. Raine's time. Dr. Raine also held the office of preacher at Gray's Inn. After his death a monument, the work of Flaxman, was erected in commemoration of his scholarship and ability. The cost of it was met by a subscription from his former pupils. Among the most distinguished of these may be reckoned Bishop Monk, George Grote, Dean Waddington, Sir H. Havelock, Bishop Thirlwall, Baron Alderson, Sir George Turner, Julius Hare, Sir Cresswell Cresswell, Dr. Russell, Lord Justice Turner.

15. John Russell is a name which claims a special notice in the annals of Charterhouse. He was born in 1786. After a distinguished career at Charterhouse and Christ Church he was appointed an Assistant Master in the School, and on Dr. Raine's death he was chosen Head Master, the statute which ordered that the Schoolmaster should be not less than 27 years of age having been set aside on this occasion. A few years after his election he introduced into the School the plan of teaching devised by Dr. Bell, and known as the Madras system, which was in great vogue in England during the early part of this century. For some time the popular acceptation of the system, and still more the

personal vigour and ability of Dr. Russell, and his "indefatigable and excellent teaching" gave such a measure of success to the change introduced by him, that the School grew rapidly in numbers. In 1825 it had reached the unprecedented total of 480. According to the plan of Dr. Bell the work of the Master consisted mainly in supervision, and a great portion of the teaching devolved upon the boys themselves. These childish pedagogues were called "præpositi," and it may be supposed that they were not always equal to the task imposed on them. "There was," says Dr. Saunders,* "a præpositus of one form, who, being a little mite but a very clever scholar, was put by Dr. Russell at the head of his class, but he said it was torture to him above everything. Dr. Russell would call out, 'Fifth form, where is your præpositus?' 'Please, Sir, here he is,' and they would hold him up by the neck." The popularity of this system was necessarily short-lived; not even the power of Dr. Russell could avail to make it efficient or durable. The result of the experiment then made upon Charterhouse may in some sort be told by the following table, which shews the numbers of the boys in the School, and of the masters employed during its continuance:—

Year.	No. of Boys.	No. of Masters.
1818	238	5
1819	290	5
1820	377	5
1821	431	5

* Public Schools Commissioners' Report, Minutes of Evidence, 546.

Year.	No. of Boys.	No. of Masters.
1822	438	8
1823	477	8
1824	471	8
1825	480	8
1826	462	8
1827	432	8
1828	367	8
1829	289	8
1830	226	7
1831	180	5
1832	137	4

But though the School roll was greatly diminished in numbers, yet there were not a few distinguished names upon it. This is the list of the 1st Form, the 6th Form to use the ordinary language of Charterhouse, in the last year of Dr. Russell's mastership :—

George Frederick Noad, late Rector of Cold Norton, a living in the gift of the Governors of Charterhouse.

George Carrey, Bell's Scholar, Fellow and Tutor of St. John's College, Cambridge; late Preacher, now Master of Charterhouse and Prebendary of St. Paul's; a Governor of Charterhouse and St. Paul's Schools. See Notices of Masters.

G. M. Sykes, formerly Fellow and Tutor of Downing College, Cambridge; late Rector of East Hatley and Vicar of Tadlow, Cambridge.

John Ernest Bode, Hertford Scholar; Senior Student and Tutor of Christ Church; Bampton Lecturer; late Rector of Castle Camps.

Gordon Whitbread, Trinity College, Cambridge; Barrister-at-Law; Judge of County Court; Governor of Charterhouse School.

Charles Nevinson, 1st Class Lit. Hum.; Fellow of Wadham College; Warden of Brown's Hospital, Stamford.

Richard Gardner, Wadham College; formerly M.P. for Leicester.

Charles Tower, St. John's College, Cambridge; Jun. Opt.; 2nd Class Classical Tripos; Rector of Chilmark.

H. W. Phillott, Student of Christ Church; Assistant Master at Charterhouse; Rector of Stanton-on-Wye.

T. H. A. Poynder, of Hartham Hall, Wilts, Esq.

W. D. Fane, St. John's College, Cambridge; sometime M.P. for South Hants.

The changes introduced by Dr. Russell were not confined to the system of teaching. The Head Master no longer took boarders into his house, as his predecessors had done. The old domestic arrangements of the School were abolished. Uppers and Fags were names belonging to the past. No other system of maintaining order and discipline in the houses was substituted for that which had been destroyed: and the results of this change were not favourable to the comfort or morals of the boys.* Dr. Russell, during some years of his tenure of office, resided at Blackheath, and the absence of the Schoolmaster for so large a portion of every day could not but be prejudicial to the best interests of the School.

* Report of Public Schools' Commissioners. Dr. Saunders' evidence, Charterhouse, 566–69.

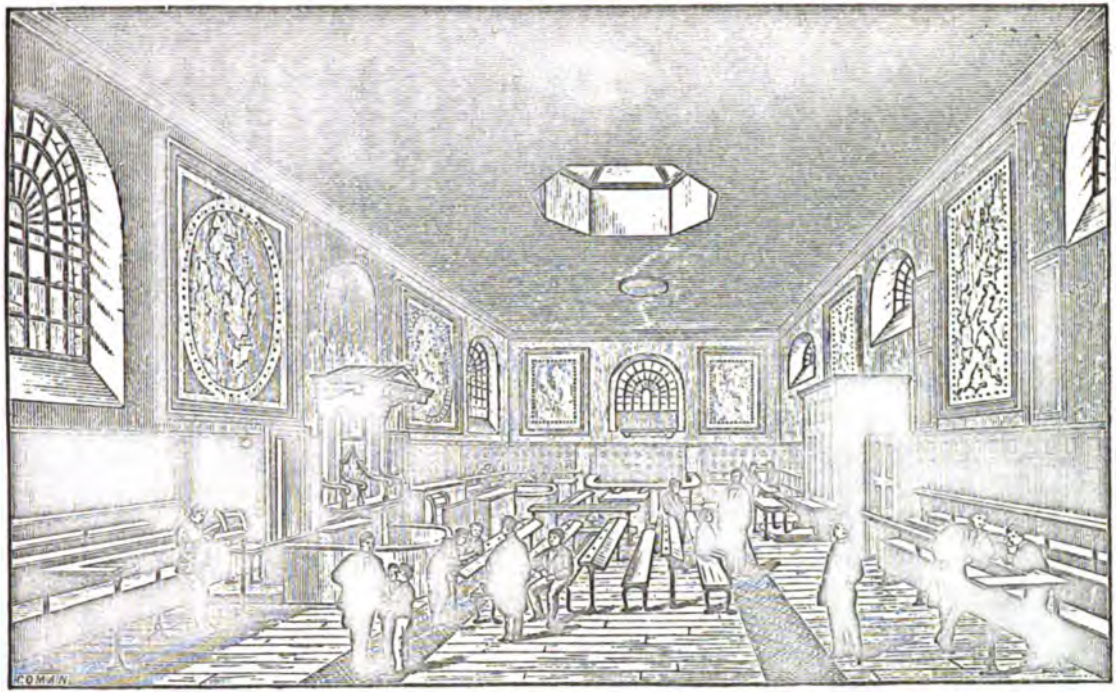
His discharge of duty must have been confined almost exclusively to tuition. It is certainly true that the care of domestic arrangements in boarding houses did at that time occupy but a small part of the thoughts of a Schoolmaster: and in this matter Charterhouse formed no exception to the general rule.

The plan of partially opening the nominations to the School took its origin with Dr. Russell. This proposal was made as early as 1814: and the history of its temporary defeat is somewhat singular. There were at the time 40 boys on the Foundation.* In order to avoid all encroachment on the patronage of the Governors it was proposed that four boys should be added to the Foundation, and that the additional places so made should be filled by competition. Dr. Russell found a supporter in Lord Grenville, and some old Carthusians who were Governors at that time, viz. the Archbishop of Canterbury and Lords Liverpool and Ellenborough. A day was appointed on which the Governors were to consider the details of the plan and to decide on the manner of election. On that day, however, Lord Grenville was called away from London that he might as Chancellor of the University receive the Allied Sovereigns who were to visit Oxford. Lord Grenville's absence was fatal to Dr. Russell's plan; four boys were added to the Foundation; but at the instance of Dr. Fisher, Master of the Hospital, the additional boys were to be nominated like all the rest, and thus the proposal to introduce the plan of

* Mr. Hearne, writing in 1677, says, "There are now 44 boys at School," *i.e.* on the Foundation: but the number for many years before 1814 was 40 only.

competition was for the time defeated. But Dr. Russell deserves no small praise for his work in this matter, and it will be seen hereafter that this work was not all lost. Another of the alterations proposed by Dr. Russell deserves special notice. In 1818 he abolished corporal punishment and substituted fines for the old-established school discipline. The boys resented very bitterly the removal of the traditional stimulus, and felt more bitterly still the attack made on their pockets. "We thought flogging was very gentlemanly,"* says Dr. Saunders in his account of the matter, "but fines most ungentlemanly." The excitement reached fever heat and burst forth one day in School in a general cry of "No fines." Dr. Russell was induced to reconsider his intention, and the result of this reconsideration was the revival of the old method of punishment. "After this rebellion,"† says Dr. Saunders, "we had our heart's content, for the day after abolishing fines, when we all walked into School together, we found a perfect forest of birch rods, and I should think that the whole school time of two hours was expended in the use and application of them." It will thus be seen that Dr. Russell possessed one at least of the highest qualifications of a great commander, viz. vigour and firmness in beating a retreat when retreat is a necessity. In Dr. Russell's time the Schoolmaster's house was rebuilt at the end of the Terrace Walk. In ancient times it had occupied that site, but Dr. Raine resided at the house which is at the entrance gate and is now the residence of the medical officer of Charterhouse.

* Dr. Saunders' evidence, Public Schools' Commission.
† Ibid.



SCHOOL-ROOM (BUILT IN 1803).

The new house, which was on a very grand scale, passed into the hands of the Merchant Taylors' Company with the playground. It is still standing, but its rooms have been converted into schoolrooms. After many years of life spent in teaching Dr. Russell resigned his charge. He was appointed to the rectory of Bishopsgate and a canonry in Canterbury Cathedral. He paid much careful attention to several societies in which he took a lively interest. Among those the chief were the Clergy Orphan Corporation and the Schoolmasters' Society. In both of these institutions his name will be long remembered. He died in his 77th year and was buried at Canterbury. His name and services are recorded on a tablet in the chapel of Charterhouse, London. The inscription closes with these words: "Vitam operosam jucunda produxit senectute, morte tranquilla coronavit." Beside the distinguished men above mentioned, Dr. Russell had under his tuition—Fox Maule (Lord Dalhousie), Henry Waddington, Edmund Lushington (late Professor of Greek at Glasgow), Dean Liddell, G. S. Venables (Q.C.), W. M. Thackeray, John Leech, the Hon. J. C. Talbot (Q.C.).

16. The name of Dr. Saunders is still fresh in the memory of all Carthusians. He was born in 1801, and was first at Winchester; but he removed to Charterhouse in 1817, and left the School for Christ Church in 1819, and a few years later (1823) he became Senior Student and Tutor of that College. Among his pupils at Oxford he reckoned Mr. Gladstone, Sidney Herbert, Lord Canning, the late Duke of Newcastle, Mr. H. Bruce (Lord Elgin), the late Bishop of Salisbury (Dr. Hamilton), and the late

Bishop of Durham (Dr. Baring). Mr. Gladstone said that "he had never known anyone who carried into the relations of tutor and pupil such kindly feeling as did Dr. Saunders." In addition to his other qualifications, Dr. Saunders was an excellent organiser, and many of the arrangements made by him still survive, after the lapse of more than 40 years, and in spite of the altered condition of the School. In the changes he introduced at Charterhouse he was assisted first by the Rev. T. James, a highly accomplished scholar, and a few years later by Mr. Oliver Walford, whose memory is most lovingly cherished by all who had the privilege of knowing him. The Head and Second Masters were united by many ties, and were closely related by marriage. Under his régime many old names and usages were restored, and many admirable additions were made to the School programme. Vocal music was made a portion of the teaching, and Mr. Hullah was charged with the instruction of the classes. The system of Dr. Bell disappeared, and the School work was restored to its former lines. Dr. Saunders once more received boys into the Head Master's house. The name of "Saunderites" which was bestowed on his boarders is still in use as the appellation of the boys who live in the Head Master's house. In the organisation of the boarding system he was ably seconded by Mr. Oliver Walford, who was known among his friends by the familiar title of "Ver," the last syllable of his christian name. From this abbreviation the name of "Verites" was formed; and this also is still applied at Charterhouse to those who board in the house occupied by Mr. Walford's successor. But a most

signal service was rendered to the School by Dr. Saunders in the revival of Dr. Russell's plan of opening some places on the Foundation to competition. For this end he struggled hard, and he was so fortunate as to be seconded in his endeavours by the aid of an illustrious Carthusian, the Hon. John Talbot (Q.C.), who brought the matter under the notice of Sir Robert Peel, and explained to him the miscarriage of the effort which had been made in 1814. Sir Robert Peel and Dr. Saunders did not allow the matter to rest until four scholarships were opened to competition. Under the care of Dr. Saunders the School flourished as well as it could flourish in so unfavourable a locality. The following table shews the numbers in the School, at intervals of five years, during his tenure of office:

Year.	No. of Boys.	No. of Masters.
1833	104	4
1838	137	4
1843	156	5
1848	176	6
1853	178	6

Dr. Saunders resigned the Head Mastership in the year 1853, on his nomination to the deanery of Peterborough, to which he was appointed by Her Majesty on the recommendation of Mr. Gladstone. In the discharge of his duties as Head Master Dr. Saunders shewed very great ability, and he had the further merit of being regarded not only as the schoolmaster, but also as the friend of his boys. If in the performance

of his daily duties he has been sometimes charged with indolence, it must be remembered that his remarkable power enabled him to compensate this failing as few other men could have done. It has been said by one of his pupils who won high distinction at Oxford, that though Saunders was sometimes drowsy, yet he could teach more in half-an-hour than anyone else could teach in two hours. In his general management he shewed much kindness, and a keen sense of humour, not unmixed with a strong regard for discipline. The following story may illustrate this statement. It is said that finding two boys determined on a fight he called them up and enquired of each whether he desired satisfaction from his enemy. On receiving an affirmative answer, "Well," said he, "I will give you satisfaction. I will flog each of you as long as the other wishes." The belligerents preferred to make peace.

Dr. Saunders died in 1878, after having held the deanery of Peterborough for 25 years. In his latter days he received an offer of the deanery of Winchester, but he thought that the time for such a change had gone by. He was buried at Kensal Green, near his old friend and colleague, Oliver Walford, on the 26th July 1878. The following names of high repute are found among Dr. Saunders' boys: Palgrave (F. T. and W. G.), Bowen (Sir G. F.), Palmer (Archdeacon of Oxford), R. Elwyn.

17. Dr. Saunders was succeeded by his pupil, Dr. Elder. This gentleman was a Scholar of Balliol College, Oxford. He took a First Class in the Schools in 1834, and was elected head master of Durham Collegiate

UPPER GREEN (1863).

p. 150.

School in 1846. From Durham he removed to Charterhouse in 1853, and so high was the opinion entertained of him by his pupils that many of the most promising boys of Durham School went with him to London. He was a highly accomplished scholar, and keenly sensitive. He strove hard for the improvement of the School, but the full effect of his ability could not make itself felt at Charterhouse, for his usefulness was impaired by occasional attacks of severe illness, which made rest a necessity. He was consequently often absent from the School during his tenure of office. In 1858 he died at the age of 46 years. By dint of hard endeavours he succeeded in improving the advantage gained by Dr. Saunders, and opening two places annually on the Foundation to competition. A memorial tablet placed in the chapel by his friends and pupils pays a well-merited tribute to his worth. Professors Jebb and Nettleship were in the School in his time.

18. During the illness of Dr. Elder much of the responsibility of the conduct of the School had fallen upon the Usher, Mr. Richard Elwyn. He had had a brilliant career as a boy at Charterhouse, and in due time he was elected Scholar and afterwards Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. At Cambridge he accumulated on himself the high distinctions of being Bell's Scholar, Craven Scholar, Senior Classic and Latin Essayist (Members' Prize). After his election to a Fellowship in 1850 he devoted himself to the study of the Law, but his legal studies were abandoned for the labours of teaching, and he was elected Usher in 1855. His tenure of this office was very arduous for the reasons above mentioned, and

there is no doubt that the anxieties of his position were unusually great. His work, however, was so ably done that on the death of Dr. Elder Mr. Elwyn was without hesitation appointed to the chief place in the School. His most earnest efforts were directed to the maintenance of a high tone among the boys, and in this way he made a strong impression on the School and left behind him evidence of hard and conscientious work. During Mr. Elwyn's time the Royal Commission of enquiry into the management and revenues of certain schools and colleges was issued, and great labour was entailed on him in consequence. Under so accomplished a scholar the learning of the School was not likely to decline, and its reputation at the Universities was well sustained. After a time the labours and anxieties of the position told seriously upon his health, and to the deep regret of the friends of Charterhouse he resigned his office in 1863. By a year's rest his health was restored, and he was able to take the appointment of head master of St. Peter's School, York, in 1864. At this school he did excellent service for seven years: and in 1872 he was preferred to the vicarage of Ramsgate. The Archbishop of Canterbury, by whom he was chosen for this work, concluded from long experience of Mr. Elwyn's ability and character that he was well fitted for a place which would entail no small measure of labour and responsibility.

The numbers of the School and of the Masters at work in it from 1853 to 1872 are shewn by the following

table. There is an interval of five years between each two extracts from the number book :—

Year.	No. of Boys.	No. of Masters.
1853 *	178	6
1858 †	128	6
1863 ‡	121	6
1868	144	8
1872 §	147	8

19. The present Head Master of Chartorhouse was educated at Christ's Hospital and Pembroke College, Cambridge. Having graduated B.A. in 1846 he was elected to a Fellowship in 1848 and appointed Tutor of the College in 1852. This work he relinquished in 1857 for the Head Mastership of Kensington Proprietary School, then vacated by Mr. Payne Smith, now Dean of Canterbury. The removal of Charterhouse was mooted in 1865, and ultimately carried into effect in 1872. Of 147 boys who were in the School in A[illegible]1872 117 removed to the buildings near Godalming, and there was an accession of 33 new boys at the beginning of the first quarter passed in the country. The following list shews the number of scholars quarter by quarter from June 18th 1872 :—

	Date.	No of Boys.	No. of Masters.
1872.	Summer Quarter ...	150 ...	... 10
	Oration Quarter ...	180 ...	... 10

* Date of Dr. Elder's appointment.
† Date of Mr. Elwyn's appointment.
‡ Date of Dr. Haig Brown's appointment.
§ Removal of the School.

Date.		No. of Boys.	No. of Masters.
1873.	Long Quarter	216	13
	Summer Quarter	244	15
	Oration Quarter	268	15
1874.	Long Quarter	286	15
	Summer Quarter	333	17
	Oration Quarter	386	19
1875.	Long Quarter	414	20
	Summer Quarter	428	20
	Oration Quarter	462	22
1876.	Long Quarter	459	25
	Summer Quarter	481	26
	Oration Quarter	500	28

By the regulation of the Governors the number of the School is limited to 500. This number has been kept up since September 1876. The total number of Masters is now 30.

CHAPTER VI.

THE POOR BRETHREN OF CHARTERHOUSE.

> Four score patriarchs here
> Wander many a year
> Until they come unto the promised land.
>
> HEARNE.

AN account of those who have retired from the business of life into such an asylum as the bounty of Sutton has provided, is of necessity very meagre. Failure of plans, disappointment of hopes, loss of fortune, are generally the passport to Sutton's Hospital, and it is not to be expected that those who have sought a home in its seclusion can offer much material for history. The plan of the Founder, so far as the Poor Brethren are concerned, was obviously borrowed from the monastic institutions which had been destroyed just before his time. The jealous exclusion of all females, even from the resting place of the dead, supplies an illustration of this spirit. By an Order of Assembly, February 25th 1627, it was decided that "No person who is not an Officer, Governor or Brother of the Hospital shall hereafter be buryed in the chapel or burial ground: and hereafter no woman or woman-kind, deceased, shall be any means be buryed in the sayd chapel or burying

place."* It is possible that in the days of Thomas Sutton no better plan than his could have been devised to supply a refuge against poverty and old age. None can doubt the beneficent intention of the Founder; and on a general review of the history of the place, few would be disposed to call in question the liberality of the provision made for the Brethren or the care and wisdom which have been shewn by the distinguished men who from time to time have been the Governors of the Hospital. The condition of the house has engaged the most thoughtful attention of those to whose charge it has been committed and notwithstanding occasional errors, the administration of Charterhouse from the days of Sutton downwards may fairly challenge comparison with the management of any trust in the kingdom. It will be seen from the earliest ordinances of the Governors of the Foundation what was their opinion of the qualifications of those who were to be elected Pensioners of Charterhouse. The general regulations, sanctioned by King Charles I., directed that candidates "should not be holden qualified for the place unless they be gentlemen by descent and in poverty: souldiers that have borne arms by sea or land: merchants decayed by pyracy or shipwreck: or servants in household to the King and Queen's Majesty." This limitation did doubtless express Mr. Sutton's views at the time when he was contemplating his Foundation, but in 1642 the Governors rescinded the above named regulation, regarding its restrictions as too narrow. A preference however

* The inscriptions on some stones in the chapel cloister shew that this rigorous enactment has been relaxed.

was still shewn for candidates who had been maimed in the wars either by sea or land. The patronage of the Governors has been very often exercised in favour of men who have seen military service: and the features of Thackeray's Colonel Newcome are pourtrayed from life. It is indeed true that few of those who in old age have found a refuge in Sutton's Hospital have any claim to public notice after the lapse of years. But there are to be found on the list of Pensioners some whose names still attract attention. Among them may be mentioned:—

1. Elkanah Settle, who became a rival of Dryden; and was elected Laureate to the City of London in preference to "Glorious John." It may be well supposed that the votes of the electors were determined rather by the political than by the poetical merits of the candidates. Settle wrote several poems in reply to Dryden's political satires. One of these is called the "Medal reversed." It was an answer to Dryden's well known portrait of Shaftesbury in "the Medal." He was born in 1648 and died at Charterhouse in 1724.

2. A more remarkable character was Stephen Gray. His life had been devoted to the study of Natural Phenomena, and especially to the properties of electricity. From his experiments he drew the conclusion that it was possible to accumulate the electric fluid on a given point. He therefore deserves to be credited with the discovery of the utility of electric agency: and to that discovery are due the wonderful results which have since been achieved in this branch of natural science; the Leyden jar, the electric battery, the electric telegraph. Gray

was elected a Fellow of the Royal Society while he was a Pensioner of Charterhouse.

3. Another inmate of Charterhouse who devoted himself to the study of Natural Science was Zachariah Williams. He was born in Wales, and for some time practised as a surgeon in that part of the kingdom. But his zeal for science induced him to abandon his profession and remove to London that he might have a better opportunity of prosecuting his studies. He hoped that he had discovered a means of obtaining the longitude at sea by careful observations of the variation of the magnetic needle: but his efforts failed, his fortune dwindled away, and he was nominated to a place in Charterhouse. The rules of the place were irksome to him. His "obstinacy and opposition were insupportable," and he was, not without some difficulty, deprived of the advantages of the Foundation. His daughter was the Miss Anna Williams whose name occurs so frequently in Boswell's Life of Johnson.*

Oftentimes the recipient of Sutton's bounty has been one who has passed his life in the best society, and has by misfortune or improvidence been reduced to penury. Such have been many of the military officers already mentioned, but other callings also have supplied Pensioners who have once been wealthy and prosperous. Within the last few years the Hospital has reckoned among its inmates one who had filled the distinguished position of Lord Mayor of London, and there is a stone in the burial yard in memory of another Pensioner whose

* See especially the note in vol. i. p. 274, ed. 1835.

friends thought that they ought to leave to after ages a record that he did, while he held the mayoralty of Ramsgate, entertain King George IV. at dinner. The clergy have supplied many a member of Sutton's Hospital. Several of the Poor Brethren have been schoolmasters; law and medicine have been practised by others. The various gradations of trade, from the position of the merchant to that of the small shopkeeper, have had or still have representatives among them. For men of such different experiences of life, as the Pensioners necessarily are, it must be no easy matter to coalesce into the brotherhood which Sutton intended to create. The rules of monastic life, however much they have been toned down by the kindness and consideration of the Governors, however much they have been modified to suit the altered condition of the times, still form the basis of the regulations by which the Pensioners are governed. And if the difficulties arising from the years and past lives of the inmates be left out of consideration, this association of aged men thus casually thrown together into a common habitation yet wears the aspect which it must have had from the first, viz., that of a religious society without the bond of religion. The working of such a society could hardly be so completely successful as its bountiful Founder desired it to be. "The Pensioner," says Mr. Malcolm, "must be old, unmarried, desolate, before he can be admitted. He retires to bed and rises in the morning without a friend to converse with. He has relations, but they are not with him: his affections wander towards them, regret amidst plenty invades his thoughts: his spirits sink and his body

wastes till death relieves him." In this picture the dark colours are not spared, and there is no doubt some exaggeration in it. There are many instances of men who feel deeply and value much the great privileges extended to them, and who are not assailed by such distressing melancholy as is described in the portrait drawn by Mr. Malcolm: but though the provision for the Pensioners is ample, and much care is bestowed on their well-being, it may be doubted whether it is a wise plan to separate an infirm old man at the age of 60 or 70 years from all who are bound to him by the ties of nature, and place him with a number of others similarly isolated. At such a time of life he has but small power or inclination to form new associations or contract new friendships or adopt new habits. There appears to be a still increasing opinion that the provision which is made for the aged in almshouses is not suitable to the requirements of these times, and in the new scheme for the government of the Hospital the Governors are empowered to substitute annual pensions, with liberty to choose a place of residence, for the benefit which hitherto has been conferred almost exclusively on those who resided within the walls of Charterhouse.

But to return to the School and its relations with the London site. In accordance with the will of the Founder, the asylum for the aged and the school for the young were placed within the same walls. It has been supposed that Mr. Sutton was much taken by a poetic fancy of the beauty of associating together in one Foundation the two extremes of life; youth with all its fresh hopes, age with its sad experience of the

dulness and staleness of the world, and that he entertained a conviction that these extremes would act beneficially on each other, boyhood gaining something from the gravity of years, age in return exercising a sobering influence on the exuberance of youthful spirit. But they who have drawn a conclusion of the character of the Founder's mind from the actions of his life will hardly credit him with a chimeric notion of this kind. As we have already seen, he laid down no iron rules for his Foundation, though it was very much the fashion of his time to bind bequests by such rules, as if the world should never see any change after that day, but he gave full liberty to the Governors and their successors to make such regulations as they by their experience should judge to be fittest for the best disposal of his charitable gift. He was eminently a practical man, and he was certainly a wise man: and there is little room for doubt that if he had seen that the well-being of the School he founded required its removal from the site he had chosen and the consequent separation of the two portions of the Hospital, he would without a moment's hesitation have sanctioned that removal and separation, as those did, who were the worthy trustees of the legacy left by Sutton to his country. When Sutton selected Howard House as the best site for his Hospital, this house was then on the very outskirts of the city. It was surrounded on all sides by open spaces. On the north, the village of Islington lay about a mile distant from the walls of Charterhouse, and the walk between them was through green fields; further to the east was the neighbouring village of Hackney. On

the west the houses of Snow Hill and Newgate Street were not yet built; no buildings were to be seen in the Strand. On the south the left bank of the river was only sparsely occupied by the mansions of peers and wealthy merchants. And even for 200 years after the Founder's death Charterhouse School was on the borders of a rural locality. But the condition of things was altogether changed when the site, once so admirably adapted for its purpose, was closely surrounded by a densely crowded population, when every trace of rural freshness was abolished and the boys were of necessity closely confined within five acres surrounded by high brick walls and overlooked from the upper storeys of Goswell Street and Wilderness Row. Such a change had come over the neighbourhood of the School, that even those who had been educated in it began to withdraw from it. They regarded it indeed with that strong attachment which generally binds Englishmen to the schools in which they have been trained, and declared that they would do anything for it except send their boys to it. Thus the School found itself decaying in spite of all that could be done by the liberality of the Founder, by the intelligence of the Governors and the devoted attachment of its sons: and its removal to the site it now occupies was at last determined. The history of this removal belongs to another chapter.

CHARTERHOUSE, SOUTH VIEW. p. 171.

CHAPTER VII.

THE REMOVAL OF THE SCHOOL.

Certus enim promisit Apollo
Ambiguam tellure nova Salamina futuram.
HORACE, *Od.* I. vii. 28-9.

THE vast increase of London during the present century and the consequent demand for building ground affected very much the fortunes of Charterhouse School. Large blocks of houses were built up to the very walls of the playground, and the School was thus deprived of the advantages of a free and open site, which it had enjoyed for 200 years. This change in the character of its position naturally gave rise to suggestions for the abatement of the evil: as early as 1825 the question of its removal was mooted: but though from time to time the proposal was revived, it was hardly entertained in serious earnestness till the Public Schools Commissioners issued their report in 1864. That distinguished body, after the most careful enquiry, decided that in their opinion "the School would thrive much better if removed to some eligible site in the country," and they recommended the subject of this removal to the serious consideration of the Governors. It cannot be doubted that the Commissioners were led to this conclusion in no small degree by the evidence of the late Dean of Peterborough, the

Very Rev. A. P. Saunders, who for 21 years was Head Master of the School, and whose memory is honoured and respected by all friends of Charterhouse. When he gave his evidence he had known the Foundation for nearly 50 years. In that evidence he expresses himself very decidedly on the necessity of a change of locality, and it is interesting to observe that he sketches out the plan which was ultimately adopted by the Governors. But though the recommendation of the Commissioners rested on so excellent a foundation, its appearance gave occasion to much hostile criticism. The discussion was begun by the late Earl of Derby, who speaking for himself and the other Governors of Charterhouse in the House of Lords, assured the House that "no governing body of the Charterhouse would ever recommend either of these two propositions, viz. (1) the election of Foundation scholars by competitive examination, or (2) the removal of the School from the London site." This statement, made on such authority, struck dismay into those who were acquainted with the true position of the School. It was evident that Lord Derby had been misinformed on the subject: and when his attention was seriously called to it by those who were able to explain to him the state of the case, he with his usual generosity frankly consented to reconsider the whole matter. The result of this consideration soon became evident; for within a few weeks Lord Derby consented to add his name to a sub-committee of Governors appointed to make a report on the issues involved in the question of the removal of the School from its London site. Still the conflict once begun was vigorously con-

tinued, for those who opposed the contemplated change, though few, were not inactive or mute. With the view of ascertaining definitely the opinions of Old Carthusians on the removal of the School, a circular letter was sent about April 14th 1865 to all who could be reached. More than 400 were thus invited to express opinions. The answers shewed an immense majority, not less than 10 to 1, in favour of the recommendation of the Commissioners. From this time there could be no doubt about the opinion of Old Carthusians, which may be summed up in the words of one of the most distinguished men educated within the walls of Charterhouse. "You ask about my feeling on the removal of the School," said Bishop Thirlwall; "my feeling is that it should remain on its present site, my judgment says that it should at once be removed from it." A memorial was presented to the Governors by the Schoolmaster and Usher, all the facts of the case were set forth, and attention to the condition of the School and its prospects was earnestly asked. The Governors met this appeal with much courtesy, and the result of it was that the sub-committee already mentioned was appointed to give careful consideration to the statements of the memorial. This sub-committee consisted of the Earls of Derby, Harrowby, Romney and Devon, Lord Cranworth and the Lord Justice Turner. In a comparatively short time a decision was arrived at, and the first steps towards putting this decision into action were speedily taken. But progress in so important a matter was of necessity slow, and it was from time to time checked by hindrances created or promoted by some who

were still strongly opposed to the contemplated removal. It is useless to dwell now on the long and anxious labour spent on the achievement of the purpose. Suffice it to say that in July 1866 negociations were concluded with the Merchant Taylors' Company for the sale of the School playground, subject to the consent of the Legislature, and at length on the 20th August 1867 an Act was passed for "enabling the Governors of the lands, possessions, revenues and goods of the Hospital of King James, founded in Charterhouse, within the county of Middlesex, at the humble petition and only costs of Thomas Sutton, Esquire, to sell the site of the School of the said Hospital and other lands; to acquire a new site for the School and to erect a new School thereon; and for other purposes." The Act also gave powers for the sale of the School site to the Merchant Taylors' Company and for the removal of the School of the Company from Suffolk Lane to the ground theretofore occupied by Charterhouse School. The ground thus sold was in extent 5 acres 2 roods, and the price paid for it was £90,000. Thus very important advantages were secured for both of these ancient Foundations. Charterhouse by its constitution was a school for boarders. In the confined and unsuitable site on which it stood it languished and declined. On that site no power could maintain the long established reputation of the School: and it was firmly believed by almost all who knew it that its revival could only be effected by a migration to "fresh fields and pastures new." This opinion, as we shall hereafter see, has been amply justified. Merchant Taylors' School was established as a day school, and so decidedly was this character

CHAPEL. VERITES. LIBRARY AND CLASS ROOMS.

p. 175.

impressed on it, that by its ancient statutes no boy was allowed to take a meal on the premises.* The Court of the Merchant Taylors' Company were desirous of raising the numbers of their School, but the narrow and confined premises in Suffolk Lane hindered this project. By the acquisition of the Charterhouse ground they were enabled to raise the numbers of the School from 250 to 500, to build commodious class rooms, and to provide a playground for the boys. Thus the removal of Charterhouse so far from "depriving the citizens of London of a benefit,"† conferred on them and on the country generally largely increased educational advantages. Before the change there were at Charterhouse 150 boys in all; at Merchant Taylors' 250. At the two Schools not less than 1000 boys are now educated. Of the 500 at Charterhouse a considerable number have their homes in London.

Very soon after the passing of the Act mentioned above, the Governors looked about for a suitable locality for the School. Much careful deliberation was spent on the choice. Naturally their minds were turned in the first instance to the estates of the Hospital, and especially to the Manor of Hallingbury Bouchers, originally chosen by Mr. Sutton as the site of his proposed Foundation. A careful review of seven or eight eligible spots was laid before the Assembly, and they ended by selecting an estate of nearly 70 acres, situate about a mile from the town of Godalming, and 34 miles distant from the metropolis. It would have been difficult to choose

* Original Statutes of Merchant Taylors' School, xxix.

† Archdeacon Hale at the Mansion House, December 1866.

a better locality. The site of the School is an extensive plateau, which commands a view of one of the most lovely panoramas in England. On the north is the long and beautiful ridge known as the Hog's Back: on the west the noble range of hills which is terminated by Hindhead and Blackdown: southwards are the downs which rise above Hambledon: and in yet further distance on the east the view is closed by the chain which is marked by St. Martha's Mount and Leith Hill. On all sides except the north the plateau is bounded by wooded slopes of hazel, interspersed with well-grown oak trees. Between the School and the town the river Wey follows its winding course, and adds beauty to the landscape. At the foot of the hill, Godalming, with its ancient church, the spire rising high above the neighbouring roofs, lies amidst an expanse of green meads. Beyond it the scene is composed of broken hills, rich pastures and extensive woods, and, nestling among these, cottages, farmsteads and church towers give a human interest to the sight.

The site once determined on, the Governors turned their attention to the nature of the arrangements to be made for the boys. After carefully weighing the advantages and disadvantages of the hostel plan, which is adopted at Marlborough, Haileybury and Wellington Colleges, and the distribution of the boys into separate boarding houses, according to the system of Winchester, Eton and Harrow, they adopted the latter method, with some special modifications, and instructed the architect to make his drawings for three boarding houses, one for the Gown-Boys or Foundationers, and two others (1) for

the Head Master and (2) for the Usher. The plan was also to contain a chapel, a common library, a Governors' room, a large school-room, six class-rooms, and a Masters' common room, called after the well-known common room in London "Brooke Hall." Mr. P. Hardwick, the architect, after gathering information from all available sources, presented his design to the Governors for their consideration. From the Governors, after careful examination, the plans passed on to the Charity Commissioners, by whose suggestions some very important improvements were introduced, especially in reference to the size of the dormitories. The Commissioners having approved the plan, subject to the proposed alterations, the work was at once put in hand. Messrs. C. and J. Lucas were employed as the builders, and a large staff of workmen took possession of the ground chosen as the site of Charterhouse School. With a becoming regard to the memory of Thomas Sutton, the first sod of the ground was turned on December 12th (Founder's Day) 1869, but the real work of building was begun on the 29th June 1870. From that date the progress of the new School was carried on with very few hindrances. The raising of the buildings was watched with constant and anxious care by those who took the warmest interest in the welfare of the School, and at last the greater part of the large structure which now overlooks the town of Godalming was complete, or rather so far finished as to be habitable. The removal of the School was effected with as little circumstance as possible. The boys left the London School for the Whitsuntide holiday on Thursday

May 16th, and met, after the usual four weeks' vacation, at Charterhouse, Godalming, on Tuesday June 18th: thus the continuity of the ordinary routine was interrupted by only three days.

It was not to be expected that so important an event in the history of the School could occur without calling up much deep feeling. For 258 years it had remained on the spot on which Sutton had placed it. Many an old tradition was connected with that site; many a record of great men who had passed their boyhood there; many a curious legend illustrated the ancient walls, and many a pious memory had a shrine within them: and now, it seemed, its place was to know it no more: the time-honoured nooks of old Charterhouse were no more to echo the voices of Carthusian boys, but another home, with every mark of the newest novelty in its construction, was to receive them. It may therefore well be supposed that the occasion was one which gave rise to mingled sentiment: but though many regrets were lavished on the old walls which Sutton himself had given to the School, and some hearts fainted at the sacrifice which was to be made, yet hope was the triumphant feeling: and they who most deeply felt what they were relinquishing were also they who knew best that this abandonment of scenes so dear to them was the best offering they could make to the maintenance and prosperity of Sutton's great Foundation. The last gathering of the School in London was made within the chapel walls. Many Old Carthusians attended the short service of prayer which was then held. One of those who were present at the Founder's Day service, when the Gown-Boys attended it for the last time in

London,* gave expression to the dominant feeling in the sonnet which follows :—

I love the Domus! Floreat! Though no more
Shall we behold again on Founder's Day
Those ancient faces and that young array
In most pathetic union as of yore
Kneeling together where they both adore:
Yet shall it flourish: 'tis a green old tree
Deep-rooted in dark earth, yet vigorously
Bidding its young leaves and new branches soar
And find a rich fresh life and freer course
Above those misty depths in purer air:
So to be not less reverend but more fair,
By a departure which is not divorce:
Domus, æternum floreas! there and here
Be greater there, here evermore as dear.

The boys met in the new buildings on June 18th 1872, less than two years after the first stone had been laid. The removal of the School necessarily caused the withdrawal of many who had attended it as day boys. Some of these joined the ranks of the boarders, and took up their residence in the new locality. By the kindness of the Merchant Taylors' Company an opportunity was given for the removal of the stones on which had been inscribed many names of boys who had been educated at the School. The most ancient of these inscriptions were on the arch called Gown-Boys' Arch—a massive structure designed after the Italian style which was prevalent in the beginning of the 17th century. It anciently formed the entrance to the school-room built

* Rev. S. J. Stone, author of the "Knight's Intercession," and some well-known hymns, one of which is "The Church's one Foundation," &c.

by the Governors immediately after Sutton's death.* The earliest name placed on these stones was cut in 1778, and there are some as late as 1818. But a larger collection of names was preserved on the stones which were on the façade of the school-room built in 1803. These too were carried to the new home, and they are now arranged in the cloister at the east end of the chapel. The keystone of the arch which formerly spanned the School entrance bears the names of the Head Masters from J. Hotchkis (1720) to Richard Elwyn (1845). The date attached to each name on these stones represents the year in which the bearer left the School.

But during the erection of the new buildings another change had passed over the constitution of Charterhouse. By the Public Schools' Act (1868), which was the result of the labours of the Public Schools' Commission, the government of the Hospital was divided, and the charge of the School was committed to a separate body of Governors, nominated according to a plan laid down in the Statute made by the Special Commissioners appointed for the purpose. The new Governing Body constituted under this Statute framed a body of Regulations for the management of the School. These Regulations are printed at length in a separate chapter.† Among the most important changes there made are (1) the abolition of patronage in regard to the Foundation; (2) the opening of all the Scholarships and Exhibitions to competition; (3) the dispersion of the Foundation Scholars

* See illustration.

† See p. 206.

FOUNDER'S COURT. p. 181.

through the various boarding houses; (4) the abolition of the office of the Usher; and (5) the adoption of a code of rules for boys not on the Foundation. These changes have been introduced with a due regard to all existing interests, and since May 1874 all elections on the Foundation have been decided by competition. Though the old system did in not a few cases offer an opportunity of recognising a man's public service by the nomination of his son to a place on the Foundation of Charterhouse, yet it was hardly to be expected that nominees should in all cases be chosen without regard to private interest and private connexion: at the same time the intellectual growth of the School was dwarfed by the low standard of qualification which was adopted to suit those who alone were recognised as the School by the Governing Body. The method of election by competition, whatever disadvantages may be attached to it, has already raised the standard of school acquirements, and will aid not a little in keeping it at a proper level. Thus the adoption of open competition extends the benefits of the Foundation more widely and is an aid rather than a hindrance to honest and laborious study: and it may be confidently predicted that the School will hereafter be more worthily represented at the Universities than it has ever yet been in the course of its existence.

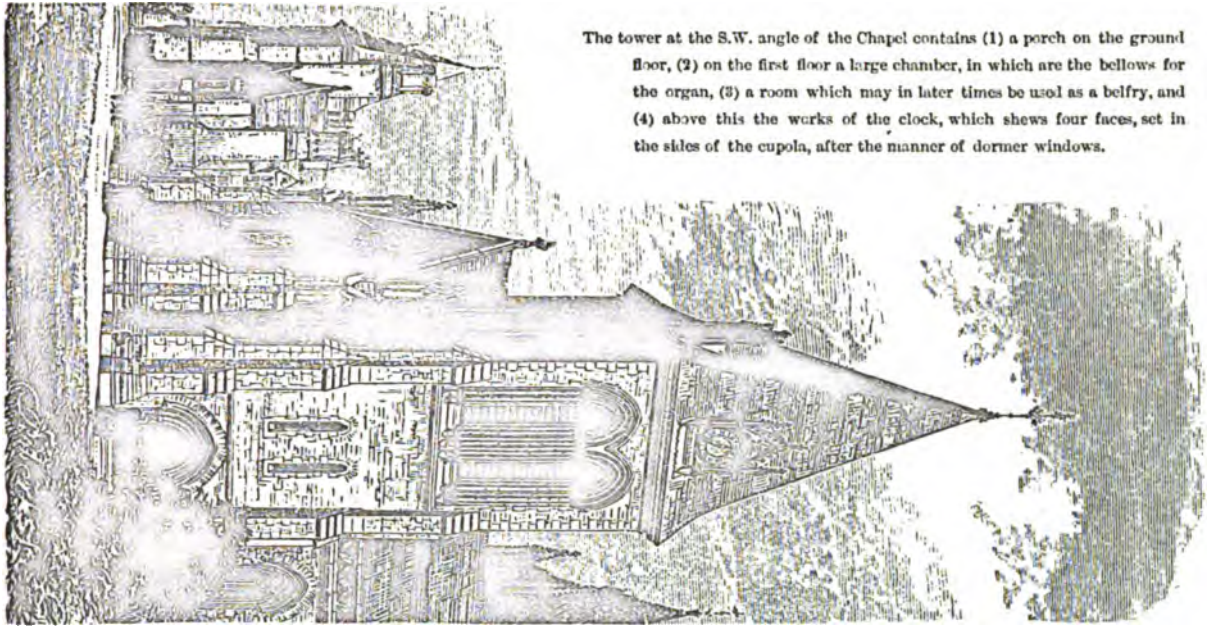
But to return: the removal worked a very speedy change on the fortunes of Charterhouse. The increase from quarter to quarter was very large,* and it was

* See pp. 161, 162.

found necessary after the first quarter to institute an admission examination. But under all circumstances great difficulties were created by the large influx of new boys, all about the same age, to whom the ways of a public school were novel and strange, and these difficulties caused much labour and serious anxiety to those who had the charge of this one; but all occasion for such anxiety has long since passed by, for the School reached its maximum number of 500 in September 1876. Since that date it has settled down into regular working order. It has been seen from what has been already said that Mr. Hardwick's plan included a Chapel; but during the progress of the building several questions of detail in regard to it were mooted, and thus its completion was delayed for nearly two years after the removal to Godalming. The parish church of Shackleford and the large school-room supplied but imperfectly the want of a Chapel; and the day of the consecration of the edifice (Lady Day 1874) was an occasion of great rejoicing. This date was selected not without reference to the building in London so long consecrated to the use of Carthusians, for it has been before stated that Sir W. de Manny dedicated his religious house * "to the Glory of God and the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin."

In providing for the building of the Chapel the Governors had decided that while they would erect the fabric the decorative additions must be either

* See p. 6.



The tower at the S.W. angle of the Chapel contains (1) a porch on the ground floor, (2) on the first floor a large chamber, in which are the bellows for the organ, (3) a room which may in later times be used as a belfry, and (4) above this the works of the clock, which shews four faces, set in the sides of the cupola, after the manner of dormer windows.

CHAPEL, S.W.

P. 184.

omitted for some time or left to the pious regard of Old Carthusians. It hardly needs to be said that Carthusian feeling was equal to the occasion. Painted glass was provided for every window in the Chapel; and the whole of this glass was supplied by members of the School past or present with the exception of the east window, which was a gift of Her Gracious Majesty, and one of the side windows given by the Duke of Buccleuch, who had at the time been for 26 years a Governor of the School. The importance of these gifts will be better understood when it is stated that the aggregate cost of the windows was not less than £1,500. Besides this a noble reredos in Venetian mosaic was presented by Mr. G. T. Clarke (of Dowlais): the remaining decoration of the east end was supplied by old Gown-Boys: the sedilia were provided by the subscriptions of those who had delivered the annual Oration. Other gifts of great value were made to the Chapel, some by private benevolence and some by subscriptions collected and bestowed with an affectionate zeal, such as Charterhouse seldom fails to kindle in the hearts of those who know it. Among these are to be reckoned the lectern, the font, the stalls at the west end, and last, not least, the noble organ, of which it may be enough to say that it is worthy of the Chapel in which it is placed and the congregation whose devotion it aids.

The block erected by Mr. Hardwick was soon found to be too small for the accommodation of the boys, and several efforts were made to supply the deficiency. The resources of Charterhouse had been seriously drawn upon

by the expenses of the new buildings: and the Governing Body did not feel justified in incurring large additional responsibilities. Under these circumstances some Masters of the School bought land immediately adjoining the property of Charterhouse, and four new houses were soon added to the means of boarding accommodation. To these others were afterwards added, so that the total number of boarding houses was increased to twelve. The class-room accommodation was also deficient, and this difficulty was met by the Governing Body, who in 1875 built eight new rooms, and granted the Governors' room to the Masters as a common hall, thus setting another room at liberty for teaching purposes. After the consecration of the Chapel the large school-room was no longer so urgently required for an assembly room, and the Governing Body allowed it to be used as a public library, the former library being used as a museum. This change was very beneficial, the library being at all times available as a reading room, and the museum giving opportunities for the study of many things which do not fall within the ordinary range of school instruction. The removal also gave opportunity for the development of tastes and amusements which could hardly have been pursued in London, either from paucity of numbers or scantiness of room. Among these developments, music may be specially mentioned; the School having now three bands in addition to its choir, viz., a military band consisting of seventy performers, a string band numbering twenty, and an orchestral band which is selected from the two before named. These and many similar instances of the development

of the School give full proof, if indeed proof were wanting, of the importance and even of the necessity of its removal from the London site to such a position as it now enjoys. It has been often urged by those who were opposed to the change that the health of the School had always been very good. The allegation is true, so far as freedom from active disease is concerned. But life, and particularly youthful life, requires something beyond this negative condition, and those who have witnessed the effect of the removal can bear testimony to the benefit derived from it in regard to the multiplication of opportunities both for work and recreation, and the increased vigour which is called forth by such opportunities. It is hardly necessary to dwell particularly on such obvious advantages as facilities for bathing, boating, and summer rambles among some of the most lovely hills and vales that are to be found in England; on the wide field open to the research of the young naturalist; the rich Flora of the neighbourhood, and the endless attractions of country life. The beneficial effect of these things is already seen not only in the advancement of some special departments of knowledge, but much more in the promotion of a catholic sympathy for many different pursuits and in the toning down of that narrow spirit which would measure all human excellence by the test of proficiency in certain athletic games. Advantages such as these are surely a full compensation for the sacrifice of local associations, however precious; and the Carthusian of other days, whatever affection he may cherish for the scenes of his early education, has good reason to rejoice that

his later representatives are no longer confined within four walls in the neighbourhood of Smithfield; that the School has abundant opportunity of development; and that an answer is granted to the prayer of his heart:

"FLOREAT ÆTERNUM CARTHUSIANA DOMUS."

CHAPTER VIII.

LIGHTER HOURS.

Neque semper arcum
Tendit Apollo.

In a book such as this is there can be no attempt made to give an account of the inner life of the School. The details of work and play, the various subtle influences which tend to develope the mind and mould the character cannot be described with any approach to life-like accuracy in a record of its history. The chronicler must content himself with a lifeless representation of that which is full of energy. They only to whom Charterhouse is known will be able to give movement to the figure and wake the dry bones of history into life. So much of the educational power of a school depends on the confidence which exists between master and pupil, on the tone which pervades its society, on the minute relations of the life of every day and every hour, that any attempt to describe these to an outsider must of necessity be a failure. The public schools of England can be judged only by their results. And though it will ever be an object of their ambition to send forth continually successors to the great scholars whose names they quote with pride, yet the

end of education is something better than great scholarship: Non scholæ sed vitæ discimus. And they may fairly claim that they have achieved this end. An able and intelligent German whose whole life has been spent in education speaks thus: "This is in brief the result of my observations: In learning our higher schools are far in advance of the English schools, but the education there is more effective because it supplies at the same time a better preparation for life."* This it does because the system which prevails is not confined to book learning, but provides opportunity for the simultaneous development of body and mind and for the cultivation of moral strength as well as of intellectual force. It is probably because the public school system is so comprehensive, that the strongest attachment to school memories is found among men of the most various tastes and endowments of widely different character. Whatever be the cause of such attachment, its existence is undeniable, and therefore every school has its periodical gatherings of old boys at which men who have been separated for years and devoted to the most different pursuits meet together from time to time and refresh themselves with the memories of the boyhood they passed together. Such an opportunity is offered to Carthusians by the observance of Founder's Day. Every

* "Das Resultat meiner Beobachtungen, kurz zusammengefasst, ist: Im Wissen sind unsere höheren Schulen den englischen weit voran, aber die dortige Erziehung ist wirksamer; weil sie eine bessere Ausrüstung in das Leben mitgiebt."—Dr. L. Wiese, *Deutsche Briefe über Englische Erziehung*: 1877.

HEAD MASTER'S HOUSE. N. SIDE OF CHAPEL. p. 189.

year on the anniversary of the death of Thomas Sutton they who have partaken of his bounty have together blessed his memory. Very early after the foundation of Charterhouse those who had been educated within its walls chose this day for their meeting, and the dinner of Old Carthusians on the 12th December is probably the most ancient of similar celebrations. It has certainly been maintained for more than 200 years. The following advertisement appeared in 1680 in the *London Journal*: "Whereas an Anniversary Feast has heretofore been held by the Gentlemen that have been Scholars in the Charterhouse School: These are to give notice that the said Feast will be kept on the 13th of the same month (the 12th falling on a Sunday): and all persons that have formerly been of the same School whose places of residence are unknown to the Stewards may be furnished with tickets at Mr. Jacob Tonson's shop at the Judge's Head in Chancery Lane, or at Jonathan's Coffee House, near the Royal Exchange." It will be observed that no place of meeting is mentioned here: information on that point would be found on the tickets spoken of in the advertisement. There is extant another announcement of the same character which appeared 40 years later (1720). In this mention is made of a religious service: "The Gentlemen educated at the Charterhouse School are desired to meet on Monday next the 12th Instant by ten of the Clock in the forenoon precisely at the Charterhouse Chapel to hear a sermon, and from thence to go to dinner at Stationers' Hall, near Ludgate Street. Tickets are delivered at

Mr. Benj. Took's* at the Middle Temple Gate, Ned Holden's at the Crown Tavern in Fleet Street, at Tom's Coffee House in Cornhil (*sic*), and at the Porter's Lodge at the Charterhouse. N.B.—Stewards are provided for next year." Copies of the tickets for the dinners of 1727 and 1732 are still preserved. They were printed from a copper plate. The words are surrounded by a rich scroll, with the arms of Charterhouse on the upper side, and opposite to this on the lower side an open book with the names of six Latin authors on one page and six Greek authors on the other. The same form of ticket was used from 1727 to 1732. It appears from these that the hour for dinner was three o'clock. On the first of these occasions the dinner was served *in* the Charterhouse, and on the second at the "Crown and Anchor over against St. Clement's Church in the Strand." The price of a ticket was 7*s.* 6*d.* in 1727, and 10*s.* in 1732. In later times an addition was made to the observances of Founder's Day by the introduction of a Latin Oration, delivered in the Governors' Room. The Orator was a Gown-Boy appointed for the occasion by the Schoolmaster. Generally the choice fell upon the Head Monitor for the time being. The appointment brought both honour and profit, for the Orator, when his speech was ended, held his cap to receive donations from those who were present. The amount of the "cap" varied very much from year to year. In one instance is was said to have been more than £360, and in another it was below £50. The

* Mr. Benj. Took(e)'s son, Andrew Tooke, was Usher of Charterhouse School at this time. (*See* List of Ushers).

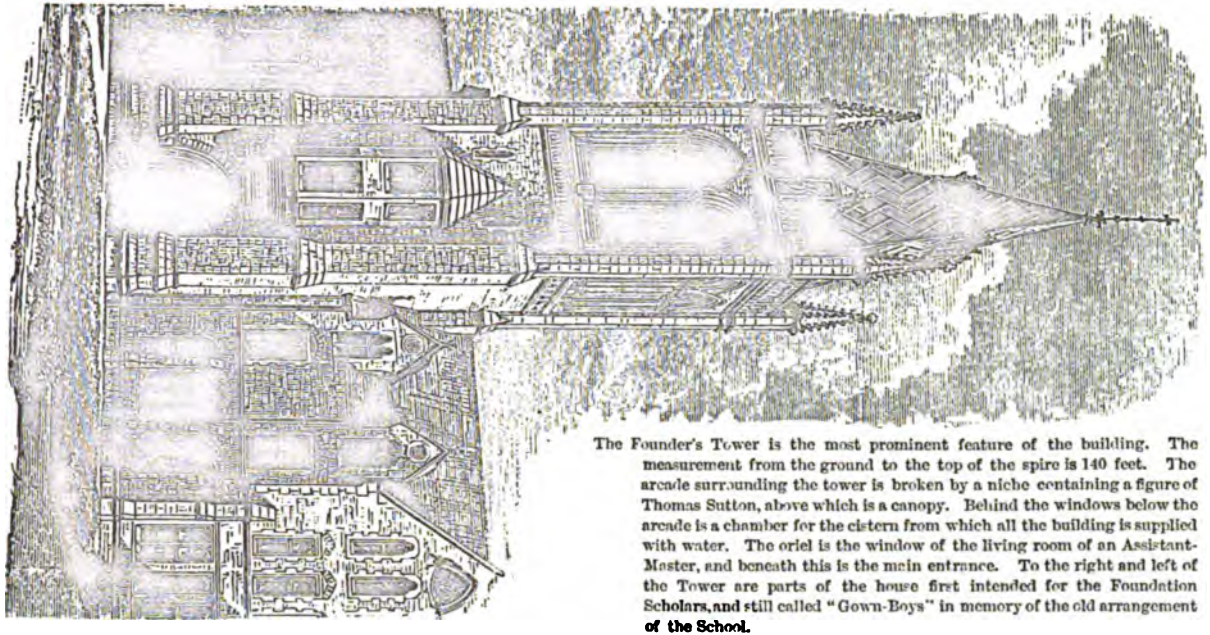
variation depended on the amount of wealth possessed by the Orator's friends. The Oration appears to have been delivered for the first time in 1746, and to have been maintained continuously for 125 years. Its loss was one of the penalties entailed by the removal of the School. From the above public notices it will be seen that the annual meeting on Founder's Day was not always held in the same place, Stationers' Hall. For *many years* before Dr. Russell's time the dinner had been served in the Pensioners' Hall in Charterhouse. It would have been impossible to find any other place so suitable for the purpose, but for some reason the scene of the gathering was changed, and Founder's Day was celebrated at the Albion Hotel. Dr. Saunders restored the former practice to the great satisfaction of Old Carthusians, for whom the associations of the spot added not a little to the zest of their enjoyment. It would savour of presumption to tread on ground which bears the footprints of Thackeray; therefore the reader who wishes for a graphic representation of the celebration of Founder's Day at Charterhouse is referred to the 37th chapter of "The Newcomes," where he will find it drawn by the hand of a master. Since 1833 the gathering of Old Carthusians has taken place annually in the old Hall on December 12th, except on one or two occasions, when it was suspended on account of some domestic loss. There was no such meeting in 1871, owing to the recent death of the Master of the Hospital, Archdeacon Hale. For several years the number of guests has been about 100. Another occasion

which draws together the members of the School is the annual Cricket Match between old and young Carthusians. This anniversary is not so ancient as the one last described, but it already has some claim to antiquity, for it took place the first time in 1833. The present site of the School has given an opportunity of making this meeting more attractive than it could have been in the small playground in London, and the numbers who are drawn to it may be estimated by the fact that sometimes four games have been made up at the anniversary now known as "Old Carthusians." Nothing could be better calculated than such meetings as these to preserve the unity of the School and maintain in all its strength the bond of Carthusian brotherhood. There is yet another celebration which must not be passed over. The Concert which is given annually also claims some years of age. It took place for the first time in 1846 under the auspices of that distinguished musician, Mr. John Hullah, who had been appointed teacher of singing to the School in the preceding March, and the year 1878 witnessed the 33rd Annual Concert at Charterhouse. An important item in the Concert is its closing hymn, well-known to all Carthusians as "The Carmen." The excellent music to which it is sung was composed by the celebrated glee writer, Mr. Horsley, who for many years (1838–1858) was organist at Charterhouse. The words are here given at length: they have undergone some slight alteration, which was reluctantly but unavoidably adopted on account of the changes made in the circumstances of the School:—

Læti laudate Dominum, Fontem perennem boni, Recolentes Fundatoris Memoriam Suttoni.	The Lord, the Giver of all good, Let all to praise agree, And raise the while a grateful strain To Sutton's memory.
Omnes laudate Dominum, Vos quibus singularia Suttonus bona præbuit: Et domum et bursaria.	O praise the Lord, all ye on whom Our Sutton's love bestowed A home of youth for learning meet, A richly dowered abode.
Senes, laudate Dominum, Reddatis et honorem Suttono, quibus requies Paratur post laborem.	Ye rev'rend Seniors, praise the Lord, Ye who to Sutton owe A haven safe from worldly care, A resting-place from woe.
Pueri, laudate Dominum, Quoscunque hic instituit Suttonus bonis literis Et pietate imbuit.	Praise Him, ye youths and children, whom Our Sutton's care provides With full supplies from learning's store And to all goodness guides.
Ergo laudate Dominum, Omnes Carthusiani, Puerique rus amantes, Et senes oppidani.	Praise then the Lord, with one consent Carthusians every one; Boyhood that roams the verdant fields And age that loves the town.
Læti laudate Dominum, Surgat e Choro Sonus, O FLOREAT ÆTERNUM CARTHUSIANA DOMUS.	Right joyfully to praise His name, The swelling chorus pour, And pray that Charterhouse may still Flourish for evermore!

Occasionally in its lighter mood Charterhouse has appeared on the stage. Differences of opinion are expressed about the propriety of theatrical entertainments in schools. Probably they are like most other things, good if properly controlled; bad, if abused. As an exercise they are surely superior to the stilted declamation which is often made the matter of school performances: they offer more opportuntity of developing power and taste than can be found in the stereotyped extracts from Shakespeare,

Molière, Schiller, Sheridan, Aristophanes; the "crambe repetita" of such entertainments. At Westminster Terence has held his own for many a day, though the seven plays of the accomplished African have of late been occasionally displaced by the Trinummus of Plautus. Many years ago Charterhouse put the Latin dramatist on the stage. It is recorded that The Eunuchus was performed in 1729, 1751 and 1760: The Andria in 1752, when Bearcroft, afterwards Head Master, took the part of Davus: The Adelphi was acted in 1761 before a most distinguished audience, among whom were the Archbishop of Tuam, the Bishops of Chester, Salisbury, Gloucester, Worcester and Raphoe, the Dukes of Leeds, Devonshire and Rutland, Lord Henley, Lord Mansfield and Lord Bath. Cato (Addison) was given in 1770 and 1773. On these occasions the parts of Marcia and Lucia were taken, the first by Charles Manners Sutton afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury, and the second by his brother Thomas, Lord Manners and Lord Chancellor of Ireland. In 1791 was presented a farce called Taste. On that occasion the chief part was taken by Henry Siddons, who in the following year was bound apprentice to John Philip Kemble for the term of five years "to learn the art of an Actor or Player." The apprentice fee of £80 was paid by the Govenors of the Hospital. Mr. Siddons married the sister of J. P. Kemble, and for the widespread reputation of his name he is indebted rather to the ability of his wife than to his own. There is no authentic record of any such performances for many years. In 1853 Sheridan's Rivals appeared on the Carthusian stage, Charles XII. in 1866, the Heir-at-Law in 1867,

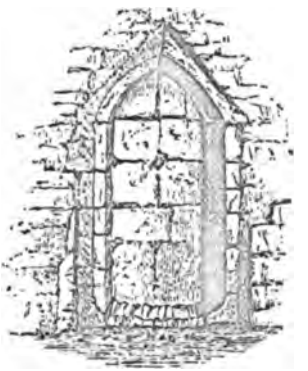


The Founder's Tower is the most prominent feature of the building. The measurement from the ground to the top of the spire is 140 feet. The arcade surrounding the tower is broken by a niche containing a figure of Thomas Sutton, above which is a canopy. Behind the windows below the arcade is a chamber for the cistern from which all the building is supplied with water. The oriel is the window of the living room of an Assistant-Master, and beneath this is the main entrance. To the right and left of the Tower are parts of the house first intended for the Foundation Scholars, and still called "Gown-Boys" in memory of the old arrangement of the School.

Payable on Demand in 1868, Helping Hands in 1869, and the Critic just before the removal of the School in May 1872. The prologue spoken by the Head Monitor at this last performance has an interest extending beyond the occasion on which it was delivered: it was as follows:—

Is it a time to tread the comic stage
When anxious thoughts Carthusian hearts engage?
Dare we in mirth and laughter say farewell
To the familiar haunts we love so well?
Were it not better far in gloom and tears
To break the spell of five times fifty years?
Yes—if we broke the spell—but who shall say
The former glory is to pass away?
For, till the brightness of its honour wanes,
Here or elsewhere, "Old Charterhouse" remains:
No change of time or scene, whate'er it be,
Can blot the pages of its history,
Or part us from the great Carthusian throng
Of men renowned in arms, in arts, in song:
Their fame, the legacy of many an age,
To us descends, a lawful heritage;
These are the hallowed memories that remain
Our unity unbroken to maintain
Past, present, future, one continuous chain.
Nor these alone are precious: many a name
To friendship dear, though yet unknown to fame,
Lives on our walls; and you, whose thoughts are rife
With sweet remembrances of schoolboy life,
May read hereafter on the chiselled stone
That Charterhouse still claims you for her own,
As a fond mother keeps with jealous care
The memory of her children everywhere.
These monuments shall other walls adorn,
And stimulate Carthusians yet unborn;
There shall we hallow what is sacred here,
And all we cherish now shall then be dear:
So great Æneas in the days of yore
Brought his best treasures to a happier shore.

Laid the foundations of a nobler home,
And from Troy's ashes raised imperial Rome.
Nor, Sutton, shall thy sons less loyal prove,
Or more unmindful of thy work of love,
Because they quit the spot that was thine own
To plant thy School in fields to thee unknown;
Thy wisdom, which its future needs foresaw,
Cramped not its infant growth by iron law:
Thou wast no bigot foe to needful change,
'Twas thine to give that others might arrange,
And for successive generations raise
An ever fresh memorial to thy praise.
What, though thine ashes rest not in our home?
What, though we know no more our Founder's tomb?
Thy better self in spirit shall be near,
To animate the hearts that hold thee dear.
So shall the School, which erst thy bounty made,
Still fondly recognise thy loving aid,
And flourish still, another yet the same,
A lasting monument of Sutton's name.
Such happy presage fills our thoughts to-day,
Hope, all triumphant, chases fear away,
And gives us courage to present our play;
Receive it with such favour as you may.



OLD DOOR OF THE CHAPEL.

CHAPTER IX.

LIST OF GOVERNORS OF CHARTERHOUSE.

1611. George Abbott, Archbishop of Canterbury.
Thomas, Lord Ellesmere, Lord Chancellor.
Robert, Earl of Salisbury.
John King, Bishop of London.
Launcelot Andrews, Bishop of Ely.
Sir Edward Coke, Knight, Lord Chief Justice of England.
Sir Thomas Foster, Knight.
Sir Henry Hobart, Knight and Baronet, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.
John Overall, D.D., Dean of St. Paul's.
George Montaigne, Dean of Westminster.
Henry Thursby, Esq.
Geoffrey Nightingale, Esq.
Richard Sutton, Esq.
John Lawe, Esq.
Thomas Browne, Esq.
Rev. John Hutton, M.A. (Master).

1612. Henry, Earl of Northampton.
Sir James Altham, Knight, one of the Barons of the Exchequer.

1614. William, Earl of Pembroke.
Rev. Andrew Perne, M.A. (Master).
William Byrde, D.C.L.

1615. Lewis Proud, Esq.
Rev. Peter Hooker, B.D. (Master).

1616. Edward, Earl of Worcester.

1617. Sir Francis Moore, Knight.
Sir John Doddridge, Knight.
Francis Beaumont, Esq. (Master).

1619. Francis, Lord Verulam, Lord Chancellor.
Valentine Cary, D.D., Dean of Westminster, afterwards Bishop of St. Asaph.
1621. John Williams, D.D., Dean of St. Paul's, afterwards Bishop of Lincoln, Lord Keeper; and later Archbishop of York.
Sir Henry Montagu, Viscount Mandeville.
Sir Thomas Coventry, Knight.
1624. Robert Dallington, Clerk (Master).
Sir Henry Martyn, Knight.
1625. Sir Robert Heath, Knight, afterwards Lord Chief Justice of England.
1626. John Dorme, D.D., Dean of St. Paul's.
John Buckeridge, Bishop of Rochester.
1628. Philip, Earl of Montgomery.
Sir Ranulphe Crewe, Knight, Lord Chief Justice of England.
William Laud, Bishop of London, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury.
1630. Richard, Lord Weston.
Thomas Winiffe, D.D., Dean of Westminster.
Dudley, Viscount Dorchester.
1631. Sir Thomas Edmonds, Knight.
1632. Henry, Earl of Holland.
1633. William Juxon, Bishop of London, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury.
1634. Matthew Wren, D.D., Dean of St. Paul's, afterwards Bishop of Ely.
Edward Littleton, Esq., afterwards Lord Littleton, Lord Keeper.
1635. Sir John Coke, Knight.
1638. George Garrard, Esq. (Master).
1639. Sir John Bankes, Knight, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.
1640. Sir John Finch, Knight, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.
1641. Robert, Earl of Warwick.
Robert, Earl of Essex.
1642. Sir Rowland Wandesford, Knight.
1643. Algernon Percy, Earl of Northumberland.
1644. William, Earl of Salisbury.
1645. Edward, Earl of Manchester.
John Glynn, Esq., Lord Chief Justice of England.

1645. Oliver St. John, Esq., Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.
John, Lord Roberts (of Truro).
Edward, Lord Howard (of Escricke).
Sir Edmond Reeve, Knight.
John Selden, Esq.
Samuel Browne, Esq.
1646. William Lenthall, Esq. (Speaker of the Long Parliament).
1647. Peter Pheasant, Esq.
1650. Philip, Lord Lisle.
Sir William Armyn, Knight and Baronet.
Sir Henry Vane, Jun., Knight.
Right Hon. Bulstrode Whitelocke, Lord Keeper.
Right Hon. John Bradshaw.
Thomas, Lord Fairfax.
Edward Cressett, Esq. (Master).
His Excellency, Oliver Cromwell.
John Gordon, Esq.
1651. John Lisle, Esq.
Charles Fleetwood, Esq.
1652. Lawrence Wright, D.M.
Sir Arthur Hesilrigge, Baronet.
1653. Sir John Wollaston, Knight.
1654. Major-General Philip Skippon.
1656. Right Hon. Nathaniel Fiennes.
1657. Right Hon. John Thurloe.
1658. Lord Richard Cromwell.
1659. Philip, Lord Jones.
1660. Edward, Earl of Manchester.
Edward, Lord Howard (of Escricke).
John, Lord Roberts (of Truro).
Samuel Browne, Esq.
Algernon, Earl of Northumberland.
Sir Ralph Sydenham, Knight (Master).
Matthew Wren, Bishop of Ely.
1661. Edward, Lord Hindon.
Thomas, Earl of Southampton.
Gilbert Sheldon, Bishop of London.
Sir Orlando Bridgman, Knight and Baronet, Lord Keeper.
1662. Anthony, Lord Ashley, afterwards Lord Chancellor, Earl of Shaftesbury.
George, Duke of Albemarle.

1663. George Morley, Bishop of Winchester.
1667. Henry, Lord Arlington.
Humphrey Hinchman, Bishop of London.
Sir Jeffrey Palmer, Knight and Baronet, Attorney-General.
1668. Sir William Wylde, Knight and Baronet.
William, Earl of Craven.
Benjamin Laney, Bishop of Ely.
1669. George, Duke of Buckingham.
1670. John, Earl of Bridgwater.
1671. James, Duke of Ormonde.
Martin Clifford, Esq. (Master).
1674. Heneage, Lord Finch, Lord Keeper, afterwards Lord Chancellor and Earl of Nottingham.
James, Duke of Monmouth and Buccleuch.
Thomas, Earl of Danby, Prime Minister.
1675. Right Hon. Henry Coventry.
John Dolben, Bishop of Rochester.
1677. Hon. William Erskine (Master).
Henry Compton, Bishop of London.
William Sancroft, Archbishop of Canterbury.
1682. Sir Francis North, Knight, afterwards Lord Guildford, Lord Chancellor.
1683. George, Marquis of Halifax.
1684. Henry, Duke of Beaufort.
1685. Rev. Thomas Burnet, LL.D. (Master).
Lawrence, Earl of Rochester.
Henry, Earl of Clarendon.
Robert, Earl of Ailesbury.
George, Lord Jeffreys, Lord Chancellor.
John, Earl of Mulgrave.
1686. Robert, Earl of Sunderland.
Peter Mew, Bishop of Winchester.
1687. George, Earl of Berkeley.
Daniel, Earl of Nottingham.
1688. James, Duke of Ormonde.
1689. Sir John Holt, Knight, Lord Chief Justice of England.
Charles, Earl of Shrewsbury, afterwards Duke of Shrewsbury.
1693. John Tillotson, Archbishop of Canterbury.
1695. Sir John Somers, Knight, Lord Keeper, afterwards Lord Somers, Lord Chancellor.
Thomas Tenison, Archbishop of Canterbury.

1697. Thomas, Earl of Pembroke and Montgomery.
William, Marquis of Halifax.
1698. Sir George Treby, Knight, Attorney-General.
1700. John, Viscount Lonsdale.
Sir Nathan Wright, Lord Keeper.
John, Earl of Bridgwater.
1701. Simon Patrick, Bishop of Ely.
Sir Edward Ward, Knight, Attorney-General.
1707. William, Earl Cowper, Lord Chancellor.
Sidney, Earl Godolphin, Prime Minister.
1709. Charles, Duke of Somerset.
1710. John Moore, Bishop of Ely, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury.
1711. Sir Simon Harcourt, Knight, afterwards Lord Harcourt, Lord Chancellor.
1713. Robert, Earl of Oxford.
William, Earl of Dartmouth.
John Robinson, Bishop of London.
1714. Sir Thomas Parker, Knight, afterwards Lord Parker, Lord Chancellor, then Earl of Macclesfield.
Jonathan Trelawney, Bishop of Winchester.
1715. Rev. John King, D.D. (Master).
1716. H.R.H. George, Prince of Wales.
William Wake, Archbishop of Canterbury.
Charles, Earl of Sunderland, afterwards Prime Minister.
1717. Sir Peter King, Knight, afterwards Lord King, Lord Chancellor.
1721. James, Duke of Chandos.
William Talbot, Bishop of Durham.
Thomas, Duke of Newcastle.
1722. Sir Robert Eyre, Knight, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.
1723. Edmund Gibson, Bishop of London.
Charles, Viscount Townsend.
1724. Right Hon. Robert Walpole, Prime Minister.
1727. Thomas, Lord Trevor.
William, Duke of Devonshire.
1729. Richard, Earl of Scarborough.
1730. Sir Robert Raymond, Attorney-General, afterwards Lord Raymond.
Lionel, Duke of Dorset.
1732. Spencer, Earl of Wilmington.

1733. William, Lord Harrington.
Sir Philip Yorke, Knight, afterwards Lord Hardwicke, Lord Chancellor.
1734. Charles, Duke of Grafton.
1736. Charles, Lord Talbot, Lord Chancellor.
1737. William, Duke of Devonshire.
John Potter, Archbishop of Canterbury.
Nicholas Mann, Esq. (Master).
1738. Sir Joseph Jekyll, Knight.
Henry, Earl of Pembroke and Montgomery.
1740. Charles, Duke of Richmond.
1743. Sir William Lee, Knight.
1744. Right Hon. Henry Pelham, Prime Minister.
1745. Sir John Willes, Knight, Attorney-General.
1748. John, Duke of Bedford.
1749. Thomas Sherlock, Bishop of London.
1750. John, Earl Gower.
Charles, Duke of Marlborough.
1751. John, Earl of Sandwich.
1753. Rev. Philip Bearcroft, D.D. (Master).
1754. John, Earl of Granville.
Robert, Earl of Holderness.
1755. George, Lord Anson (the famous circumnavigator).
1756. John, Duke of Rutland.
1757. William, Duke of Devonshire.
Matthew Hutton, Archbishop of Canterbury elect.
Granville Leveson, Earl Gower.
1758. Thomas Secker, Archbishop of Canterbury.
William, Lord Mansfield, Lord Chief Justice of England.
1761. Robert, Lord Henley, Lord Chancellor, afterwards Earl of Northington.
Rev. Samuel Salter, D.D. (Master).
1762. John, Earl of Bute, Prime Minister.
Richard Osbaldeston, Bishop of London.
1763. Charles, Earl of Egremont.
Charles, Marquis of Rockingham, afterwards Prime Minister.
1764. Right Hon. George Grenville.
George, Earl of Halifax.
George, Duke of Marlborough.
1765. Richard Terrick, Bishop of London.
1768. Charles, Lord Camden, afterwards Lord Chancellor.

1769. Frederick Cornwallis, Archbishop of Canterbury.
1770. Augustus Henry, Duke of Grafton, Prime Minister.
1771. Frederick, Lord North, Prime Minister.
William Henry, Earl of Rochford.
1772. Henry, Lord Apsley.
1777. Henry, Earl of Suffolk.
1778. Thomas, Viscount Weymouth.
Rev. William Ramsden, D.D. (Master).
1779. Robert Lowth, Bishop of London.
Edward, Lord Thurlow, Lord Chancellor.
1781. William, Earl of Dartmouth.
1783. Thomas, Lord Sydney.
John Moore, Archbishop of Canterbury.
1787. Right Hon. William Pitt, Prime Minister.
1792. Beilby Porteus, Bishop of London.
William Wyndham, Lord Grenville, afterwards Prime Minister.
1793. Alexander, Lord Loughborough, Lord Chancellor.
1794. Right Hon. Henry Dundas, afterwards Lord Melville.
Lloyd, Lord Kenyon, Lord Chief Justice of England.
1796. John Frederick, Duke of Dorset.
William Henry Cavendish, Duke of Portland, afterwards Prime Minister.
1799. John, Earl of Chatham.
1800. George John, Earl Spencer.
1802. John, Lord Eldon, Lord Chancellor.
1803. Right Hon. Henry Addington, Prime Minister.
Edward, Lord Ellenborough, Lord Chief Justice of England.
1804. Rev. Philip Fisher, B.D. (Master).
1805. Charles Manners Sutton, Archbishop of Canterbury.
Robert Banks, Lord Hawkesbury, afterwards Lord Liverpool, Prime Minister
1806. Right Hon. Charles James Fox.
Thomas, Lord Erskine, Lord Chancellor.
Right Hon. William Wyndham.
1809. Charles, Earl Grey, afterwards Prime Minister.
John Randolph, Bishop of London.
1810. Right Hon. Spencer Perceval, Prime Minister.
1811. John Jefferies, Earl Camden.
Francis, Earl of Moira.
1812. Edward Venables Vernon, Archbishop of York.

1814. Dudley, Earl of Harrowby.
1817. William Howley, Bishop of London, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury.
1819. John, Earl of Westmorland.
1823. Right Hon. George Canning, afterwards Prime Minister.
1827. Right Hon. Robert Peel, afterwards Sir Robert Peel, Prime Minister.
Frederick John, Viscount Goderich, Prime Minister.
1828. Arthur, Duke of Wellington, Prime Minister.
1829. John Singleton, Lord Lyndhurst, Lord Chancellor.
1834. Charles James Blomfield, Bishop of London.
1835. Sir Charles Manners Sutton, Bart.
Sir Nicolas Conyngham Tindal, Knight, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.
1838. Charles Christopher, Lord Cottenham, Lord Chancellor.
1840. William, Viscount Melbourne, Prime Minister.
1842. James Archibald, Lord Wharncliffe.
Ven. William Hale Hale, M.A. (Master).
1844. Richard William Penn, Earl Howe.
1845. Walter Francis, Duke of Buccleuch and Queensberry, K.G.
William, Earl of Devon.
1846. Charles Cecil Cope, Earl of Liverpool, G.C.B.
Lord John Russell, Prime Minister, Earl Russell in 1861.
1847. Edward Copleston, Bishop of Llandaff, Dean of St. Paul's.
1848. Thomas, Lord Denman, Lord Chief Justice of England.
John Bird Sumner, Archbishop of Canterbury.
Thomas Musgrave, Archbishop of York.
1849. Henry, Marquis of Lansdowne, Lord President of the Council.
1850. Right Hon. Fox Maule, Secretary at War, Lord Panmure in 1852, Earl of Dalhousie in 1860.
1851. Sir Cresswell Cresswell, Knight, a Justice of the Common Pleas.
Thomas, Lord Truro, Lord Chancellor.
1852. Edward Geoffrey, Earl of Derby, Prime Minister.
1854. George, Earl of Aberdeen, Prime Minister.
1855. Robert Monsey, Lord Cranworth, Lord Chancellor.
1858. Dudley, Earl of Harrowby.
1859. Archibald Campbell Tait, Bishop of London, Archbishop of Canterbury in 1869.
Sir George James Turner, Knight, a Lord Justice of the Court of Appeal in Chancery.

1860. Charles, Earl of Romney.
1861. Charles Thomas Longley, Archbishop of York—of Canterbury in 1862.
1863. Henry John, Viscount Palmerston, Prime Minister.
William Reginald, Earl of Devon.
William Thomson, Archbishop of York.
Frederic, Lord Chelmsford, Lord Chancellor.
1866. Right Hon. William Ewart Gladstone, Prime Minister.
1867. Sir William Erle, Knight, a Justice of the Common Pleas.
1869. John Jackson, Bishop of London.
William Page, Lord Hatherley, Lord Chancellor.
1870. John Winston, Duke of Marlborough.
Hugh Mac Calmont, Lord Cairns, Lord Chancellor, afterwards Earl Cairns.
1872. Rev. George Currey, D.D. (Master).
1874. Roundell, Lord Selborne, formerly Lord Chancellor.
1874. Adelbert Wellington Brownlow, Earl Brownlow.
1878. Anthony Wilson Thorold, Bishop of Rochester.
1879. Benjamin, Earl of Beaconsfield.

To the list here given should perhaps be added the names of the reigning Sovereigns, with those of their consorts and the heirs-apparent to the Crown, to whom the privilege of nomination to the Foundation has always been conceded; but they have taken no part in the government of the Hospital.

CHAPTER X.

STATUTES AND REGULATIONS OF CHARTERHOUSE SCHOOL.

A Statute for determining and establishing the Constitution of the New Governing Body of Charterhouse School made by the Special Commissioners appointed for the purposes of "The Public Schools Act, 1868."

In pursuance of "The Public Schools Act, 1868," we, the Special Commissioners appointed for the purposes of the said Act, do by this Statute enact as follows, that is to say:—

MEMBERS OF GOVERNING BODY.

1. The Governing Body of Charterhouse School shall consist of the Archbishop of Canterbury for the time being as an ex-officio member, and of the following elected members, namely,—

One member to be elected by the Hebdomadal Council of the University of Oxford.

One member to be elected by the Council of the Senate of the University of Cambridge.

One member to be elected by the Senate of the University of London.

One member to be elected by the President and Council of the Royal Society.

One member to be elected by the Lord Chancellor for the time being.

One member to be elected by the Lord Chief Justice of England for the time being.

One member to be elected by the Head Master, the Second Master, and the Assistant Masters of the School for the time being.

Three members to be elected by the Governors of Sutton's Hospital in Charterhouse for the time being.

Four members to be elected in the first instance by the Governors of Sutton's Hospital in Charterhouse and in subsequent cases in manner hereinafter mentioned.

The said elected members may be elected, as aforesaid, at any time within three months after the approval of this Statute by Her Majesty in Council.

PROVISION FOR FILLING UP VACANCIES IN GOVERNING BODY.

2. Every vacancy occurring in the offices of the elected members of the Governing Body shall be filled up within three months after the date of its occurrence in manner following, that is to say:—

Every vacancy from time to time occurring in the offices of the four members to be elected in the first instance by the Governors of Sutton's Hospital in Charterhouse shall be filled up in perpetuity by a

member to be elected by the Governing Body for the time being; and, subject to the foregoing provision, every vacancy from time to time occurring in the offices of the elected members of the Governing Body shall be filled up in perpetuity by a member to be elected by the person or body of persons above mentioned for the time being who by this Statute had the power of electing the member in respect of whom the vacancy occurs.

QUALIFICATION OF THE MEMBERS.

3. Any person not being the Head Master, Second Master, or one of the Assistant Masters of the School may be elected a member of the Governing Body, who is duly qualified in the judgment of the person or persons by whom he is elected to take part in the government of the School as a place of liberal education.

POWER OF QUEEN IN COUNCIL TO FILL UP VACANCIES.

4. If any elected member be not appointed within the time by this Statute limited for his election, or if any such vacancy as aforesaid be not filled up within three months after the date of its occurrence, Her Majesty may, by Order in Council, make such appointment or fill up such vacancy by the nomination of any qualified member, subject to the following proviso, namely, that the making of such appointment or filling up of such vacancy shall not confer upon Her Majesty any power of filling up any subsequent vacancy, unless the person or body of persons aforesaid empowered by this Statute to fill up such vacancy have failed to do so within three months after the vacancy has occurred.

POWER OF THE MASTER OF SUTTON'S HOSPITAL IF ELECTED A MEMBER OF THE GOVERNING BODY.

If at any time the Master of Sutton's Hospital in Charterhouse be elected a member of the Governing Body, he shall have, with respect to Charterhouse School, the same powers as any other members of the Governing Body and no other powers, any Statute or Charter to the contrary notwithstanding.

MODE OF SUMMONING MEETINGS.

5. The first meeting of the Governing Body shall be summoned by the Archbishop of Canterbury, and shall be held in London within six months of the date of the Order in Council signifying Her Majesty's approval of this Statute, and on and after the date of such meeting the said Governing Body shall be deemed to be the new Governing Body of the School for all intents and purposes.

Subsequent Meetings shall be summoned at such times and places (the places being in London or the School) as the Governing Body may determine.

NON-ATTENDANCE OF MEMBERS.

6. If any elected member be absent from every meeting of the Governing Body during the space of two years, he shall, ipso facto, cease to be a member; and the office of any such member if absent as aforesaid shall be deemed to have been vacated on the expiration of two years from the date of the last meeting attended by him, or of his appointment if he have never attended a meeting.

QUORUM.

7. No business shall be transacted at any meeting of the Governing Body unless five members at least be present.

CHAIRMAN AT MEETINGS.

8. At the first meeting of the Governing Body held after the approval of this Statute by Her Majesty in Council, and at the first meeting held by them in every subsequent year, the members of the Governing Body present at such meeting shall choose one of their body to act as Chairman of the Governing Body for the year then current, and shall also, if they think fit, choose another member to act as Deputy Chairman for the same period.

If the Chairman or Deputy Chairman die or cease to be a member of the Governing Body during his period of office, the members present at the next meeting held after the occurrence of such vacancy shall choose some other member to fill the vacancy, and the member so chosen shall hold office as long as the person in whose place he is chosen would have held the same.

If at any meeting neither the Chairman nor Deputy Chairman of the Governing Body be present, the members present shall choose some one of their number to be Chairman at such meeting.

In case of an equality of votes at any meeting the Chairman of the meeting shall have a second or casting vote.

DATE OF OPERATION OF STATUTE.

9. This Statute, when approved by Her Majesty in Council, shall have full operation and effect from the date of the Order in Council signifying such approval.

Approved and Sealed by the Special Commissioners appointed for the purposes of "The Public Schools Act, 1868," this twenty-second day of April one thousand eight hundred and seventy-one.

L. S.

STATUTES FOR THE GOVERNMENT OF CHARTERHOUSE SCHOOL.

INTERPRETATION CLAUSE.

1. In the interpretation of these Statutes "the Governors" shall mean "the Governors of Sutton's Hospital in Charterhouse,"—"the Governing Body" shall mean "the New Governing Body of Charterhouse School,"—"the School Fund" shall mean "the annual moneys which shall be paid by the Governors to the Governing Body,"—"the Tuition Fund" shall mean "the moneys, from time to time by regulations in that

behalf made, payable and received for tuition of the boys in the School," and "School Exhibitioners" shall mean "the holders of Exhibitions tenable at the School."

EXISTING FOUNDATION BOYS AND BOYS NOMINATED BY THE GOVERNORS.

2. Save as to the rights of any boy being on the Foundation at the time of the passing of "The Public Schools Act, 1868," the right to clothing of boys on the Foundation shall cease, and, save as aforesaid, and save and except that they shall not be entitled as of right to Exhibitions at the Universities, or to donations on leaving the School, boys on the Foundation at the time of the approval of this Statute by Her Majesty in Council, shall retain their rights, privileges and emoluments.

SCHOLARSHIPS ON THE FOUNDATION.

3. From and after the approval of this Statute by Her Majesty in Council, and saving the right of any boy then nominated to be admitted to the Foundation in exercise of the powers vested by custom in the Governors at the time of the passing of "The Public Schools Act, 1868," which powers, subject to any alterations made by or in pursuance of the said Act, are by the 28th section of the said Act continued in force, and after the appointment of the Governing Body may be exercised by the Governing Body in the same manner in which they might have been exercised if the said Act had not passed, there shall be such a number of Scholars on the

Foundation as the Governing Body, having regard to the state of the School Fund, shall from time to time determine, and the Foundation Scholarships established by these Statutes shall be divided into two Classes, that is to say, Senior and Junior Scholarships.

SENIOR SCHOLARSHIPS.

4. There shall not be less than thirty Senior Scholarships, and the value of each of such Scholarships shall be £80 per annum.

5. Admission to Senior Scholarships shall be determined by competitive examination, to be conducted as the Governing Body shall from time to time direct, and such Scholarships shall be open to all boys who shall have been at the School at least twelve months previous to the commencement of the examination, and who shall be between the ages of fourteen and sixteen years.

JUNIOR SCHOLARSHIPS.

6. There shall not be less than thirty Junior Scholarships, and the value of each of such Junior Scholarships shall be £60 per annum.

7. No boy shall be a candidate for a Junior Scholarship who on the 15th day of July in the year of election is less than twelve or more than fourteen years old.

8. At least three calendar months before the examination for Junior Scholarships in each year, public notice shall be given of the number of vacancies in the Junior Scholarships to be filled up at the next Election,

and of the time within which and of the person to whom the names of Applicants to become candidates for the same are to be sent in. Each application shall be sent in within one calendar month after such public notice. The Candidates shall be submitted to a competitive examination, according to the result of which the Scholarships shall be bestowed as hereinafter provided. Provided always, that it shall be lawful for the Governing Body, if it appear to them that any successful Candidate is in point of circumstance not fit to receive the aid of an endowment, to withhold from the Scholarship to which such Candidate shall have been elected the payment of £60 per annum hereinbefore mentioned. In such case the said £60 per annum shall be at the disposal of the Governing Body, to be by them applied in aid of the education of any other deserving Candidate, or any boy or boys in the School who may seem to the Governing Body to need such aid.

9. The examination for Junior Scholarships shall be in Latin, French, Arithmetic, and English, Writing from Dictation, and in such other subjects as the Governing Body shall from time to time determine, and shall be conducted by such Examiners and be on such a day in the latter half of the month of July as the Governing Body shall from time to time fix.

10. Every Junior Scholarship shall be vacated on the Scholar being elected to a Senior Scholarship, or on his completing his sixteenth year, unless such Scholar's birthday occur in the course of a Term, in which case he may retain it until the end of such Term.

GENERAL PROVISIONS RELATING TO SENIOR AND JUNIOR SCHOLARSHIPS.

11. The Election of Scholars shall be vested in the Governing Body, who shall elect after an examination conducted by Examiners appointed by them, and after receiving a report from such Examiners of the result of such examination.

12. On the day of Election to each class of Scholarships in every year, the Governing Body shall arrange in order of merit, on two rolls, the names of as many Candidates for Senior and Junior Scholarships respectively as shall in their judgment be sufficient to supply vacancies. Where any vacancy or vacancies occur in the Senior or Junior Scholarships, the Governing Body, or if such vacancy or vacancies occur more than twenty days before the next meeting of the Governing Body, the Head Master, shall at once fill up the said vacancy or vacancies by admitting a Scholar or Scholars from and according to the order of the names on the said rolls respectively. Each roll shall be cancelled on the morning previous to the following Election, and no Candidate shall by reason of his name having appeared upon such cancelled roll, have any claim to preference at such following Election.

13. The tenure of all Scholarships shall be dependent on continuance at the School, and on good conduct and diligence, to be from time to time certified to the Governing Body by the Head Master.

EXHIBITIONS TENABLE DURING CONTINUANCE AT THE SCHOOL.

14. There shall be ten Exhibitions of the value of £20 per annum, open to all boys at the School under fourteen years of age, tenable (on condition of good conduct and diligence, to be certified by the Head Master) until sixteen years of age, and capable of being held conjointly with Junior Scholarships, but not with Senior Scholarships, and such Exhibition of £20 shall be vacated on the Exhibitioner completing his sixteenth year, unless such Exhibitioner's birthday occur in the course of a Term, in which case he may retain his Exhibition until the end of such Term.

15. The Election to £20 Exhibitions shall be made by the Governing Body after a competitive examination, and in accordance with the result thereof; and the examination for such Exhibitions shall take place at such time and in such manner as the Governing Body, in communication with the Head Master, shall direct.

EXHIBITIONS TENABLE AFTER QUITTING THE SCHOOL.

16. There shall be not less than twenty Exhibitions tenable after quitting the School, and each of such Exhibitions shall be of the value of not less than £80 per annum, payable quarterly.

17. The Exhibitions tenable after quitting the School shall be awarded as the result of competitive examination (to be conducted as the Governing Body shall direct, and by examiners appointed by them), and shall be open to all boys in the School. They shall be tenable

for a period of not more than four years (dependent upon satisfactory proof from quarter to quarter to the Governing Body of good conduct and diligence), at any University in the United Kingdom, or in any other place of special education, or elsewhere in preparation for any profession or occupation, subject to the approval of the Governing Body. Of such Exhibitions one in each year shall be awarded to the Candidate most proficient in Classics, one to the Candidate most proficient in Mathematics, and one to the Candidate most proficient in Natural Science.

18. The income of Lady Holford's Exhibitions, namely, two tenable at University College at Oxford, and one at any College in the University of Cambridge, shall be consolidated, so as to form one Exhibition of the value of £80, to be placed in all other respects under the same conditions as the other Exhibitions, tenable after quitting the School, and such Exhibition shall bear the name of Lady Holford's Exhibition. Any unapplied or surplus income of Lady Holford's Exhibition shall be accumulated, and the capital or income of such accumulations from time to time applied to enlarge the then existing Exhibition, or to establish one or more similar Exhibitions.

GENERAL PROVISIONS RELATING TO SCHOLARSHIPS AND EXHIBITIONS.

19. Every boy elected to any Junior Scholarship, and every School Exhibitioner, if not already at the School, shall be forthwith entered thereat, and shall receive no

benefits from his Scholarship or Exhibition excepting for so long as he continues at the School.

20. Any or all of the Scholarships and Exhibitions vacant in any given year, whether tenable at, or after quitting the School, may be withheld at the discretion of the Governing Body, in default of deserving Candidates.

21. The Head Master shall have power to grant leave of absence to any Scholar or School Exhibitioner for any period not exceeding a Term, but no Scholar or School Exhibitioner shall be absent for more than a Term without leave from the Governing Body.

22. The Governing Body shall in all such cases of absence exceeding one month decide as to the portion, if any, of his Scholarship or Exhibition to which an absent Scholar or School Exhibitioner shall be entitled.

23. In the case of the grave misconduct of any Scholar or School Exhibitioner, the Head Master shall have power to expel such offender, or suspend his Scholarship or Exhibition, and shall at once report to the Governing Body any such case of expulsion or suspension and the reason thereof, and every such case shall be subject to an appeal to the Governing Body.

24. No Scholar or School Exhibitioner shall be required to reside in any one of the School Houses or Boarding Houses which may be licensed by the Governing Body. Any Scholar or School Exhibitioner who shall not reside in any such School House or licensed Boarding House shall be entitled to one-half part only of his Scholarship or Exhibition during the time of his residence elsewhere, but he shall not be entitled to any

part of his Scholarship or Exhibition if his place of residence be not approved of by the Head Master.

25. If any Scholar or School Exhibitioner fail to satisfy the Examiners in the Annual General Examination, the Head Master shall report such failure to the Governing Body at their next meeting. The Governing Body may, upon such report, at their discretion, either admonish such Scholar or School Exhibitioner, or summarily deprive him of his Scholarship or Exhibition, and in the case of a Scholarship, the vacancy caused by any such deprivation shall be filled up forthwith.

BISHOP BENSON'S FUND.

26. The income derived from the Funds representing the legacy of £50 given by Bishop Benson "for the service of the Scholars," shall from time to time be applied by the Head Master in the purchase of School Prizes, or in such other way for the service of the Scholars as the Head Master shall think expedient.

HEAD MASTER.

27. The Head Master shall be a Member of the Church of England, of the Degree of M.A., or of some equal or superior Degree, in some University in Great Britain or Ireland.

28. The Head Master shall be continually resident during the whole of each School Term, unless he have special leave of absence from the Governing Body, for good cause certified to them in writing. A dwelling-house shall be assigned to him for residence, and be kept

for him in tenantable repair, and free from rates and taxes, at the expense of the School Fund, and he shall be required to reside in such dwelling-house, and shall not, without the consent of the Governing Body, underlet the same, or any part thereof. He shall not, without such consent, hold any Ecclesiastical or other office to which emolument is attached.

29. The Head Master shall not, unless with the consent of the Governing Body, resign his office without giving at least three calendar months' notice of his intended resignation.

30. The Head Master shall receive the annual stipend of £400 out of the School Fund, together with such a proportion of the Tuition Fund as the Governing Body shall by regulations in that behalf determine.

USHER.

31. Whenever, and so soon as the Reverend Frederick Poynder shall cease to hold the office of Usher, the said office shall be abolished.

32. The Governing Body shall have power at any time, if they think fit, to arrange with the Reverend Frederick Poynder for the resignation of his office as Usher, and to give compensation in respect thereof out of the School Fund, or out of the Tuition Fund, such compensation not to exceed £400 per annum.

SCHOOL AND TUITION FUNDS.

33. The Governing Body shall, out of the School Fund, make the following payments on account and in part payment of Scholarships, that is to say, to the

Master of a Boarding House, for every Senior Scholar in such house, £55 per annum, and for every Junior Scholar in such house, £35 per annum, and to the parents or guardians of every Scholar who is not a Boarder, provided the place of residence of such Scholar be approved of by the Head Master, the following sums, that is to say, for every Senior Scholar the sum of £15 per annum, and for every Junior Scholar the sum of £5 per annum.

34. The Governing Body shall, out of the School Fund, and on account and in part payment of Exhibitions tenable during continuance at the School, make the following payments, that is to say, to the Master of a Boarding House, for every £20 Exhibitioner in such house, the sum of £20 per annum, and to the parents or guardians of every £20 Exhibitioner who is not a Boarder, provided the place of residence of such Exhibitioner be approved of by the Head Master, the sum of £10 per annum.

35. The Governing Body shall, out of the School Fund, pay to the "Tuition Fund" for every Scholar the annual Tuition Fee of £25, or such other Tuition Fee as shall from time to time be made payable by Regulations in that behalf, and such payment shall also be on account of such Scholarship, and such Tuition Fund shall be dealt with, as shall be provided by Regulations in that behalf from time to time to be made.

36. The Governing Body shall have power to defray out of the School Fund any expenses of examinations.

37. The Governing Body may appoint any person to act during their pleasure as Secretary, determine his

duties, and assign to him out of the School Fund such salary as they shall think fit. They may provide and pay such Assistant or Assistants for him as they may think necessary.

38. The Governing Body shall appoint an Auditor. He shall be paid such salary out of the School Fund as they shall think fit, and shall hold his office during their pleasure, and shall audit accounts and make a report in reference thereto at least once in each year.

39. The unapplied residue, if any, in each year, of the School Fund, shall be stated at the passing of the yearly accounts as unapplied surplus. Such surplus or such portion of it as the Governing Body may determine shall be invested to the credit of the School Fund upon such securities as from time to time may be sanctioned for the investment of cash or funds under the control of the Court of Chancery.

40. The Governing Body may apply such surplus to the Foundation of Scholarships, or Exhibitions, or prizes, to the improvement of School Buildings, to provide pensions for masters on retirement, to the maintenance of the Chapel Services, or to such other objects in connection with the School as they shall from time to time determine.

COMMON SEAL.

41. The Governing Body shall from time to time make rules for the safe custody of the Common Seal.

42. The Common Seal shall not be affixed to any writing or document except by the order of the

Governing Body, and in the presence of at least one member of the Governing Body.

43. A copy of every document or writing, sealed with the Common Seal, shall be entered in a Register, to be kept for that purpose.

APPOINTMENTS TO ECCLESIASTICAL BENEFICES.

44. All persons who have done good service to the Hospital or to Charterhouse School, and also all persons who have been educated at the School, whether on the Foundation or not, shall be capable of being appointed to any Ecclesiastical Benefice, the patronage of which is vested in the Governors.

REPEAL OF EXISTING STATUTES

45. All Statutes and Regulations relating to Charterhouse School, and existing at the time of the passing of the "Public Schools Act, 1868," shall, from and after the approval of these Statutes by Her Majesty in Council, be repealed.

REGULATIONS FOR THE GOVERNMENT OF CHARTERHOUSE SCHOOL.

CHAPTER I.

ADMISSION AND DISMISSAL OF BOYS NOT ON THE FOUNDATION.

1. No boy shall be admitted to the School before eleven years of age, or after fifteen years of age, unless for a special reason, to be approved by the Head Master, and reported by him to the Governing Body.

2. Any parent, guardian or next friend, desiring the admission of a boy to the School, shall fill up and sign a form of application, specifying the name and age of the boy and the name and residence of the parent, guardian or next friend.

3. All boys presented for admission shall be examined, under the direction of the Head Master, and their place in the School shall be determined by him after such examination.

4. No boy shall be admitted unless he be sufficiently advanced in proportion to his age to profit by the teaching of the School, and unless he produce satisfactory proof of diligence and good moral character.

5. The Head Master shall have power to refuse the admission of any boy to the School, or to dismiss from the School any boy not on the Foundation, and in case

of such refusal or dismissal, he shall report the circumstances to the Governing Body.

6. No boy shall remain in the School after the end of the term in which he shall be sixteen years of age, if still in the fourth or any lower form, and no boy shall remain at the School after the end of the term in which he shall be nineteen years of age, unless by the special permission of the Head Master.

7. No boy shall be admitted as a day Scholar unless he reside with his parent or guardian, or in some place of residence approved of by the Head Master.

8. A room or rooms shall be provided for the use of day boys in the intervals of School, and where their books, coats, &c., may be kept.

CHAPTER II.

BOARDING HOUSES.

1. No person, except a Master employed in the School, shall be permitted to keep a Boarding House.

2. The Masters of the Boarding Houses shall be appointed and removed by the Head Master; they shall take the risks and profits of their own Boarding Houses, and no payment or consideration on account of good-will, shall be made, directly or indirectly, on the transfer of a Boarding House.

3. The number of boys in any Boarding House shall not exceed such limit as the Governing Body may from time to time determine, and there shall be no Boarding House except such as is licensed by the Governing Body.

4. The Boarding Houses within the boundaries of the School land at Godalming shall be kept in tenantable repair, and the rates and taxes thereof shall be paid by the Governing Body, who shall be entitled to require from the occupier of any such Boarding House (the Head Master only excepted), payment of such a sum by way of rent, as they shall consider sufficient in each case.

CHAPTER III.

SCHOOL SERVICE AND REPAIRS.

1. All payments to persons employed in the service of the School shall be made under the direction of the Head Master, and their appointment, dismissal, and the arrangements of their duties shall rest with him.

2. A sum shall be allotted annually, for the payment of service for the School, and shall be applied as the Governing Body may from time to time direct.

3. The Head Master shall have authority to order petty repairs to the amount of £50 in each quarter of the year; for any larger amount the sanction of the Governing Body shall be required.

CHAPTER IV.

ACCOUNTS AND MINUTE BOOK.

1. The Governing Body shall cause full accounts to be kept, in such manner as they shall from time to time direct, of all receipts and expenditure for and on account of the School.

2. The Governing Body shall cause a sufficient Abstract of Accounts to be drawn up in each year, with a Balance-sheet of all receipts and expenditure of income for the year last past.

3. The above-mentioned Abstract and Balance-sheet shall be examined, and, if found correct, passed by the Governing Body at the beginning of each financial year. A copy of such Abstract and Balance-sheet shall be forwarded to each member of the Governing Body one week at least previously to the meeting appointed for such examination.

4. The Governing Body shall keep two banking accounts. These accounts shall be called "The School Fund," and "The Tuition Fund," respectively.

5. The School Fund shall comprise all moneys paid by the Governor of Sutton's Hospital to the Governing Body of Charterhouse School, and shall be kept, until the Governing Body shall otherwise direct, at Messrs. Childs' Bank, to the account of the Governing Body.

6. The Tuition Fund shall comprise all moneys paid for boys on account of Tuition, and shall be kept, until the Governing Body shall otherwise direct, at Messrs. Coutts' Bank, to the account of the Governing Body.

7. Cheques on both the School Fund and the Tuition Fund shall be drawn on the signatures of two members of the Governing Body, and countersigned by the Secretary.

8. All Bills transmitted by the Head Master to the Secretary for payment shall be previously examined and approved by him, and so marked.

9. A sum of £50 shall be allowed to the Head Master

every year for such assistance as he may need in regard to keeping the accounts of the School.

10. Minutes of all proceedings of the Governing Body shall be entered in a Minute Book and signed by the Chairman at the next meeting. In the same book there shall be recorded the entry into office of every new member of the Governing Body, and also the names of all the members present at each meeting.

CHAPTER V.

TUITION FUND.

1. The money received every year from tuition fees shall be divided into eight portions, which, until the Governing Body shall otherwise direct, shall be thus allotted :—

To the Head Master - - -	One portion.
„ Classical Masters - -	Not more than three portions.
„ Mathematical and Natural Science Masters - -	Not more than two portions.
„ Modern Language Masters	Not more than one portion.
„ Writing, Music, Drawing, and Drill Masters, and payments for any other expenses for instruction and examination - -	Not more than one portion.

2. The unallotted surplus, if any, of the Tuition Fund shall be dealt with as the Governing Body may from time to time determine.

CHAPTER VI.

FEES AND CHARGES.

1. The annual tuition fee for every boy shall be £25, payable in equal instalments at the end of each term. The tuition fee for every Scholar shall be paid by the Governing Body from the School Fund, as provided by the Statutes. The tuition fees of boys not paid by the Governing Body shall be paid, in the case of Boarders, by the Masters of the Boarding Houses, and in the case of day boys by the parents or guardians, to the Head Master, who shall pay such sums as he receives to the Tuition Fund.

2. The Boarding House charges, including ordinary medical attendance, but exclusive of tuition fees, shall be £70 per annum for each boy, to be paid in equal instalments at the end of each term.

3. In the case of any boy being absent from the School more than one month, the Head Master shall decide as to what portions, if any, of his boarding and tuition fees shall be remitted.

4. An annual Capitation Charge of £5 per head shall be made on each boy in the School who has been entered thereat since Whitsuntide 1872, or shall hereafter be entered, with the exception of the Scholars, for the purpose of increasing and maintaining the School Buildings.

5. In the case of Boarding Houses erected by Masters at their own expense such Masters shall be allowed to charge a sum not exceeding £10 in addition to the Boarding Fees.

6. No boy shall be entitled to return to the School until his account for the preceding term shall have been paid.

7. At the end of every term, the Governing Body shall pay from the School Fund, the sums made payable by the Statutes, in manner following, that is to say, to each Master of a Boarding House—

	£	s.	d.
For every boarder in his house who is a Senior Scholar	18	6	8
,, ,, Junior - -	11	13	4
,, ,, £20 Exhibitioner -	6	13	4

as a portion of the Boarding House charges of such boys.

8. The fees and charges for boys who were in the School before Whitsuntide 1872 shall continue on the same scale as heretofore.

9. No extra charge shall in any case be made for private tuition on any of those subjects which form part of the compulsory School course.

CHAPTER VII.

SCHOOL INSTRUCTION.

1. The following subjects shall be taught to all boys in their progress through the School, viz.:—Religious Knowledge, Classics, Arithmetic, Mathematics, Natural Science, History, Geography, English, and either French or German.

CHAPTER VIII.

NUMBER, POSITION, AND PAYMENT OF MASTERS.

1. The number of Masters shall be so arranged that there may be not less than—

One Classical Master for every		- 40 boys
„ Mathematical	„	- 80 „
„ Modern Language	„	- 80 „

There shall be always at least one Master entirely employed in teaching Natural Science, with such assistance from other Masters as may be found necessary.

Additional Masters may be appointed for Drawing, Music, Modern Languages, Natural Science, and other subjects, as the Governing Body shall from time to time think fit.

2. All the Assistant Masters shall be appointed by and hold their offices at the pleasure of the Head Master, who shall also assign to each of them their respective rank, duties, and work.

3. At the beginning of each Term the Head Master shall lay before the Governing Body a detailed statement referring to the following matters:—

(*a*) The Number of Masters, and how each is employed in the School.

(*b*) The proposed distribution of the Tuition Fund, having regard to the advantages of house or lodgings enjoyed by some Masters and not by others.

4. At the end of every year, the Head Master shall lay before the Governing Body an account of the manner in which the Tuition Fund has been distributed.

CHAPTER IX.

EXAMINATIONS.

1. There shall be an annual general Examination of the School, conducted by four Examiners, of whom two at least shall be Classical and one Mathematical.

2. The Examination of Candidates for the Senior Scholarships and the £20 Exhibitions shall be conducted by the Head Master jointly with the said Examiners.

3. The Governing Body, at some Meeting to be held before the 31st of March in each year, shall fix the times of all Examinations for the current year, appoint the Examiners and define the amount of their remuneration.

4. The results of all Examinations shall be declared and published in such manner as the Governing Body shall direct.

CHAPTER X.

SCHOOL REPORT.

1. The Head Master shall yearly deliver to the Governing Body a report of the condition and progress of the School, and also a statement of any material changes introduced into the management or course of studies, and also of any changes he may deem it expedient to introduce for the better management and development of the School, and generally of all matters affecting the condition and welfare of the whole establishment.

2. Such report shall include particulars of—

1. The number of boys admitted during the year.
2. The number who have left during the year.

3. The number of Boarders in each Term, distinguishing the separate Boarding Houses.
4. In respect of School instruction.
   (*a*) The number of boys learning each subject, the classes in which they are arranged, the number of exemptions, with observations, at the Head Master's discretion, on the working of the system.
   (*b*) The subjects in which the Classes have been examined during the year.
   (*c*) The School prizes, with names of the successful candidates, and any honours obtained at the Universities or elsewhere.
5. The names of the several School servants, their duties and salaries.

CHAPTER XI.

DIVINE SERVICE.

1. The Head Master shall regulate the attendance of the School at Divine Service, the arrangement of the Chapel services, and the appointment of preachers.

2. The services of the Chapel shall be in accordance with the rites and ceremonies of the Church of England.

3. The parent, guardian, or next friend of any day boy attending the School, may claim, by notice in writing of any conscientious objection on his part, addressed to the Head Master, the exemption of such boy from attending the School Prayers or Church Services, or any lesson or series of lessons on a religious subject, and such

day boy shall be exempted accordingly, and shall not by reason of such exemption be deprived of any advantage or emolument to which he would otherwise be entitled.

CHAPTER XII.

HOLIDAYS.

1. The Holidays of the School shall not be more than six weeks in August and September, and five weeks in December and January, and four weeks in April and May.

2. Not more than one day in addition to any vacation shall be granted at the desire of any Royal or distinguished visitor, or in celebration of any event, and such extension of the Holidays shall be left to the discretion of the Head Master.

3. The Head Master shall have power at any time to grant a holiday in celebration of successes gained by Pupils of the School, or for any fitting cause.

4. In case of infectious sickness it shall be allowable for the Head Master either to dismiss the School before the usual time or to defer the return of the boys, as may appear necessary. Such dismissal of the School or postponement of its re-assembling shall be reported to the Governing Body.

CHAPTER XIII.

AUTHORITY OF HEAD MASTER.

1. Subject to the provisions contained in the Statutes and Regulations for the government of Charterhouse

School, the Head Master shall have authority over all the Masters, and shall have under his control, the choice of books, the method of teaching, the arrangement of Classes and School hours, and, generally, the whole internal organisation, management and discipline of the School.

CHAPTER XIV.

MEETINGS OF THE GOVERNING BODY.

1. Meetings of the Governing Body shall be held three times during the year, once in the course of the months of February, July, and November, and at such other times as the Chairman shall appoint, and any meeting may be adjourned by a vote of the members present.

2. Any three members of the Governing Body may, by written application to the Chairman, require a meeting of the Governing Body to be called, or in the event of his failing to call such meeting, may do so themselves, subject to such Regulations, if any, as the Governing Body may from time to time enact for the purpose.

ADDITIONAL REGULATIONS MADE BY SPECIAL COMMISSIONER.

EXAMINATIONS AND INSTRUCTION.

1. At the annual examination of the School the Governing Body shall appoint or approve Examiners from without, competent to examine in all departments of study; and the Examiners shall superintend the conduct of the examination, with the view of ascertaining the condition of the School in all such departments. The Examiners shall have such assistance from the Masters as the Head Master shall provide. The Governing Body shall print and send school-lists showing the results of examinations to the parents or guardians of the boys.

2. In any examination determining the position of a boy (not being one of the senior boys) in the School, or in any report of a general examination, the proportion of the marks to be assigned to Mathematics shall be not less than one-eighth, nor more than one-fourth, as the Governing Body shall think fit.

3. In every examination determining the position of a boy (not being one of the senior boys) in the School, or in any report of a general examination, the proportion of the marks to be assigned to Natural Science, shall be

not less than one-tenth nor more than one-fourth, as the Governing Body shall think fit.

4. In any examination for the senior boys, the proportion of marks to be assigned to the several subjects of study shall be determined by the Head Master, with the approval of the Governing Body.

5. The Governing Body shall from time to time determine the point in the School list above which the boys shall be reckoned as senior boys for the purposes of these Regulations.

6. There shall be one Mathematical Master, at the least, for every 100 boys in the School; and there shall be one Science Master, at the least, for every 200 boys learning Natural Science in the School. All such Masters shall rank as Assistant Masters of the School.

7. Every boy shall learn Natural Science continuously from his entrance into the Shell, until he become one of the senior boys in the School, unless his parent or guardian express in writing a desire for his exemption from this Regulation.

8. The Head Master shall give facilities so far as he shall think practicable to any senior boy, at the request of his parent or guardian, to pursue any particular subject or subjects of study as may be deemed most expedient for him, and to discontinue any other subject or subjects of study for that purpose.

9. The Governing Body shall, as soon as possible, provide and maintain out of the income of the property of the School, or out of any other means at their disposal for the educational purposes of the School, laboratories, and collections of apparatus, and of specimens.

10. Any boy entering the School above the age of 12 shall have the opportunity of showing acquaintance with Botany, Physical Geography, or some other branch of Natural Science, and with Arithmetic, or Mathematics, in the entrance examination for the School.

11. Any boy in the School above the age of 12, who may evince an aptitude for Natural Science, shall have facilities for that study.

CHAPTER XI.

GOVERNING BODY OF THE SCHOOL, FROM DECEMBER 1872 TO DECEMBER 1878.

1872. Archibald Campbell, Archbishop of Canterbury.
William, Archbishop of York.
Walter, Duke of Buccleuch and Queensberry, K.G.
William Reginald, Earl of Devon.
* Charles Marsham, Earl of Romney.
Dudley, Earl of Harrowby, K.G.
* Frederick, Lord Chelmsford.
The Rev. C. J. Vaughan, D.D., Master of the Temple.
The Rev. G. Currey, D.D., Master of Charterhouse.
The Hon. G. Denman, Q.C., M.P., now Mr. Justice Denman.
The Rev. Professor Palmer, now Archdeacon of Oxford.
† R. C. Jebb, Esq., Public Orator in the University of Cambridge, now Professor of Greek in the University of Glasgow.
George Busk, Esq., F.R.S.
P. M. Duncan, Esq., F.R.S.
Gordon Whitbread, Esq.
1874. John, Bishop of London.
1876. Rev. E. W. Blore, Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge.
1878. Roundell, Lord Selborne.

---

* Deceased. † Resigned.

HIGH STREET,
PRINTED BY H. STEDMAN,
GODALMING.

65

DA687.C2 B8
Charterhouse, past and present; a b
Gutman Library AOU7953
3 2044 028 793 974